The Rise and Fall of Marth LowellOLD VERSION

Story: The Rise and Fall of Marth LowellOLD VERSION
Storylink: https://www.fanfiction.net/s/9120814/1/
Category: Super Smash Brothers
Genre: Friendship/Drama
Author: Ignitious
Authorlink: https://www.fanfiction.net/u/658707/
Last updated: 12/15/2013
Words: 89017
Rating: T
Status: In Progress
Content: Chapter 1 to 25 of 25 chapters
Source: FanFiction.net

Summary: Currently being rewritten and redone in a new direction. It can be found under "The Rise and Fall of Marth Lowell." Still the same AU concept

Chapter 1: It's Just Another Day

The sound of rain was pouring down, every drop making a whisper as it fell. A young boy was deep into his slumber as the weather seemed to soothe his dire needs. He was heavily wrapped up within his blankets, clutching on a second pillow as if it were a teddy bear. As he continued sleeping, the sound of footsteps began to synthesize with one another. The sound got louder as the door began to slowly open as a figure moved their hand towards the light switch. Eventually the lights would be turned on as the boy quickly groaned and turn the other way.

"Marth, it's time to get up silly. You don't want to be late for your first day of school, right?" spoke the figure.

The boy known as Marth would slowly get up and look towards the figure. His vision was a hazy as he placed his right hand on the desk near his bed, looking for his glasses. After a few minutes, the azure haired boy would find them, quickly putting them on to see his older sister at the door. A soft smile would form on his lips as he responded to her with a nod.

Elice would return a smile back before heading out to the kitchen. Marth would stumble off his bed, tripping on his on blanket and fell onto the maroon carpet. He'd get up, opening his closet and grabbing his school uniform and other bodily necessities before heading over to the bathroom to do his daily routine. Afterwards, the teen would quickly head downstairs with his belongings to meet his sister in the kitchen.

"Aren't you excited to be a junior this year?" asked Elice.

He'd once again respond with a nod as his sister didn't seem to mind. After all, she was the only family he had left. Their parents died a couple years ago in a car accident and ever since then, Elice was taking care of him.

A few moments later, the two finished eating breakfast as Elice handed him some lunch money before sending him off. She'd told him to be good, kissing him on the cheek as he walked out the door. The school was only a few blocks away from him. The bluenette would open up his umbrella and begin strolling through his neighborhood. He'd look around, admiring the different varieties of front yards as he'd begin to space out. Eventually, Marth would get back into reality and make his way towards the crosswalk.

As he was about to cross, a speeding car could be heard, interrupting the peaceful nature of the rain. It'd slow down and inch up close to him near the side walk, breaking as a window was being rolled down. Marth winced right away when he saw the driver along with the passenger.

Douglas Falcon, otherwise dubbed Captain Falcon, would smirk along with his pal Donkey Kong. Both of them wore jersey jacket's, indicating that they were part of the school's football team.

"Hey dweeb, where you going?" taunted Douglas. DK would laugh along, making Marth tense up.

He refused to answer them, knowing where this was bound to go anyways. Marth had to go through this every year since the day he's started middle school. The boy knew how much it would pained Elice to hear about his constant bully problems, so he always managed to pull on through with a smile.

The football player would make a face, obviously getting frustrated. Heavily sighing, he'd once again ask Marth where he was going. They were demanding an answer as he tensed up even more.

"S-school…." he answered. The two football players would look to each other as they exchanged faces in laugh. DK was about to speak until he was interrupted by a girl's voice.

"HEY!" she shouted. "LEAVE HIM ALONE YOU JERKS!" The girl would quickly run towards Marth, glaring at the two jocks.

DK would sing-song in a mocking voice. "Oh no, it's Caeda. Run for you lives everyone!"

Rolling his eyes, Douglas would just give in and sigh.

"You heard the woman dude. We should get going anyways." Before they'd leave, he'd decide to drive his car near the curb, wetting Marth before driving off, laughing.

"Goodbye losers!"

The car would disappear from their sight as the girl looked to Marth. She'd open her schoolbag, taking out a change of clothes wrapped in a bag as she handed it to the bluenette. "Here, I brought this just in case those jerks pulled off something like this." He'd take it, thanking her as they'd continue their way towards the school.

Marth really owed Caeda big time. After all, she was his best friend. She was the one who was always defending him from his bullies, even going as far as to start a fight. He really didn't know how he could have gone on without her. The two would arrive at the school, heading inside as Marth would head over to the boy's bathroom to change into the spare clothe's his friend offered him.

Afterwards, he'd come back out, thanking her once again.

" It's no problem." she said, ruffling his hair. " Anyways," she murmured " How was your summer vacation? Did you do anything exciting this year?"

He'd take a moment to think first. Shaking his head, he'd replied " No, not really. Unless of course you count going to the museum as something interesting." Marth would chuckle nervously, his face giving off a tint of red. Caeda would give him a puzzled look at first then gave off a mischievous grin.

" Hey Marth, what's wrong? My, you're getting redder than a tomato!" she teased.

" Oh, it's nothing. Just a funny thought I had."

" Would a funny thought make your face tint red?" The blue haired girl always playfully teased him. He knew she didn't mean any harm anyways. Marth would change the subject as the color of his face returned back to normal.

" Are you taking AP classes this year?" he asked curiously.

" Of course!" she answered back, smiling. Before he could respond, the bluenette would fly across the floor, hitting the ground.

Anyways, that's the end of chapter 1. Hope you guys enjoy it.

Oh yeah, I should mention this now, this is a leisure story just written for fun so I'm not going to care about the grammar errors and whatnot.

I'm also open to suggestions and ideas for the next chapters, so if you got any, don't feel afraid to tell me. You may never know, but I'll probably take your suggestion if I like it.

Also two easy questions. Feel free to answer these as well.

1. Who else should be on the football team?
2. Any suggestions of who should be popular?
3. If any, should Marth have any other friends besides Caeda? If so, who?

Chapter 2: Welcome Back to School

Wow, back so fast with another chapter. Gotta love having muses for storywriting, especially when it means ignoring your homework.

Thank you guys for reviewing so far, I really appreciate it!

As for questions, yes I will be using all characters from the SSB games, plus some other Nintendo characters from their games. Of course, the attention will mostly go towards those who are involved in the SSB games for this AU.

I also just realized I've used the female variation of bluenette instead of using the male spelling, bluenet.

Anyways, here's Chapter 2.

The sound of laughter emerged as Caeda turned around and glared. Two more football players arrived on the scene, one of them being the very tall Gerudo Ganondorf and the other Wolf. The two would laugh out in amusement, giving each other quick glances before exchanging high fives with one another. It didn't help that more students stopped what they were doing, following in like lemmings. The blue haired teenage girl rolled her eyes, facing the two.

"That wasn't funny at all," she cried out. Her hands would form into fists as she clenched tightly. The two boys would catch their breath, smirking. They were obviously pleased with their results as they got other students to laugh with them in unison.

"Well, excuuuuuuse me princess," blared out Wolf, "No need to try to ruin people's fun now. Besides, this is just our daily ritual. Lowell here understands our thing, right kid?"

Marth would just lie on the floor, getting lost within his own thoughts. As the three argued and tried to justify their claims, he began to think to himself about his life. For one thing, he absolutely despised how he had to go through this daily torture. It didn't help the fact that every time he would cry for help, the bullying would just get worse. He hated every single moment of it. The blue haired boy began to ponder why him. There were more fish in the sea anyways, but why was it out of all people, they had to find him the most interesting. He grimaced at his thoughts, realizing the reality that he had more bitter feelings towards most of the people here. From the jocks to the cheerleaders to even the bystanders, he hated them all.

They've all disgusted him from their attitudes even to their existence. He winced a little, not realizing that he held a lot of anger inside. As he began to trail off his thoughts, he slowly started to see an object waving in front of his face. Coming to a slow realization, it happened to be someone's hand as the sounds that gave the school life returned as well.

"Earth to Marth, earth to Marth, can you hear me?"

He'd look up to notice a familiar red head. Roy would offer him a hand, helping the young blue haired teen up. Marth thanked him, brushing off any possible dirt that gotten on his clothes while Roy picked up his belongings. Before he could ask him how he was, the red head quickly spoke.

"We should get heading to class. It starts less than a minute."

"*Shit!"* Marth spoke in his thoughts. The two would wave and part ways as he would quickly dash to his first lesson of the day. Arriving at the nick of time, he would hear a few snickers before taking his seat. The male would quickly scope the classroom, wondering who he possibly was going to be stuck with all year for his first class. Marth would recognize a few faces off the bat. One of them was Daisy, a cheerleader who happened to be best friends with the head cheerleader Peach Toadstool. Others included Samus, Kirby and Roy's childhood friend Lilina. A soft smile would also appear on his lips as he saw two of his friends, Kirby and Luigi, in the same classroom as well.

His field study was hastily interrupted by the sound of the door as their AP History teacher walked in. The man would place three stacks of papers on his desk and told everyone to grab one of each as he began to write on the whiteboard. Marth would get up from his desk, grabbing the papers that were offered to the class. Looking over, the first stack consisted of the syllabus; the second contained the list of the assignments, and the third about AP testing and how to prepare yourself.

The blue haired boy would glance at the whiteboard, reading what his teacher wrote. As the class started to break into chatter, they were immediately interrupted by their teacher. He introduced himself as Mr. Snake, but told the students that he just preferred being called Snake. The entire class period was spent going over the entire syllabus, rules and regulations and the required readings. After time was up, the bell would ring as the students went out.

Marth would approach Kirby and Luigi, waving at them.

"Hey Marth, what's up?" asked Kirby. The Italian would stand with them, being silent as he waited for his opportunity to shine.

"To be honest, nothing really. Just had, let's just say I've had an interesting day so far." He replied.

"That's good. It's surprising that we all ended up in the same class first hour. Speaking of which, what class do you have next period?"

Marth would be staring off into space, looking to see a group of girls attempting to flirt with someone. They'd quickly walk away, giggling mad as they talked to each other with high pitched voices. His eyes would trail to see who or what those girls were exactly hyping about and there he saw him.

Ike.

Sorry if this chapter is shorter than the last, but I felt that the ending for it is a nice cliffhanger.

Anyways, have you ever seen people like this in your high school or have you ever experienced dealing with people like Wolf and Ganondorf? You don't have to answer this question, its just there to get you thinking. You could if you want to though.

Now, the question I want you guys to answer is this.

Out of all the jocks Marth has encountered so far in the story, why do you think Ike is being singled out? What makes Ike so important from the rest of the popular students and the football players.

Also, should Ike be the captain of the kendo club.

I hope you all enjoy this chapter. Remember, I'm always open up to ideas so if you have any of what could happen in chapter 3, just tell me! ;)

Chapter 3: Marth and Ike

Hey guys! I've really managed to whip up another chapter! This is like a new record for me or something because I usually don't write fast like this.

Heads up, as the story goes on, these chapters are obviously going to get longer. :)

Also, if the story gives me this feel, some dark themes will happen. Of course, if I go that route, I will put up a trigger warning or something before that chapter happens and at the start of that chapter.

Anyways thanks for reviewing guys! I really appreciate it!

Enjoy!

"Hey Marth, are you even listening?" His trail of thought was interrupted by the pink puffball. He'd look at his friends, apologizing. While Kirby went on about his summer vacation, his focus once again turned to the lean, muscular blue-haired boy. The other boy now seemed to be engaged in a conversation with Fox, Falco and Mario. There was something about him that he couldn't quite put his finger on. Marth knew that Ike was the captain of the kendo club at school, but to him, there was more.

Once again the boy's thoughts would be interrupted, this time by the minute bell. He would scurry off to his next class, AP Pre-Calc with Mr. Game and Watch. Entering the classroom and taking a seat, the blue haired kid didn't bother scoping the room this time. Instead, he went back to his to his mind. For once, he just didn't care about what was going on in the classroom. After all, he was too fixated on Ike.

Reciting what he knew about the spiky haired boy, Marth remembered right off the bat that he was one of the most popular kids in the school. Ike, for one thing, seemed to notice others if they caught his interest. Another is that he was always hanging around with his close friend, Soren. He started to try to analyze Ike's life, wondering what his hobbies are and what he does when he's not on campus. As he continued contemplating, it finally came to him.

Ike used to be his best friend back in first grade. Marth began to reminisce the past, wondering what happened. It pained him to think about how far apart they've grown, especially since they've used to be so close during childhood. He remembered how they used to go over each other's' houses nonstop and play all kinds of games. Now thinking about it, Marth began to wonder what exactly happened. What made Ike change? Before he could analyze the answer, the classroom door opened as an unfamiliar face came in.

The figure happened to be handsome and looked rather foreign. He had elf ears and sported dirty blonde hair. The teacher would greet him and hold off discussing the syllabus for just a moment to introduce him.

"Class, may I have your attention for a moment. I'd like to introduce a very special student today. Coming all the way from Hyrule, I'd like to introduce you to Link Highwind. Now class, Link's not like other students. You see, he's mute meaning he can't talk. His communication will either be done through expression, writing, and if you know sign language, you can communicate with him with that."

Link would take a seat, focusing on the board as Marth would turn the pages on his syllabus to catch up with the class. He found the Hylian to be interesting and made note of himself to try to practice his sign language.

After time was up, class ended. Everyone emerged out of their seats to head to their next class, or rather, hit their friends up. The blue haired boy would get up, looking around to say hello to the new kid however, Link already left before he had the chance. Sighing, Marth would leave the classroom and take a look at his schedule.

"Oh great, I have PE next…." he murmured in his thoughts. Thank god it was the first day, so it was going to be rather easy. It's not that he didn't mind having PE or anything, the only problem was that it was one of the regular classes. All students from different classes, whenever it be honors, advanced placement or regular were united with one another. While most high schools required physical education classes for two years, this one required four. What made it more unique than the other high schools is that in PE, besides the usual sports games, they also measured your abilities. Each kid who attended this school has a unique ability. Some could cast magic, others were talented at fighting and some had physic powers.

Marth would head on over to the gymnasium, slightly opening the door and peeking to see who he had class with this period. No one really seemed to be inside yet, seeming as they were talking to their friends during passing time. The boy would step inside and sit on the bleachers as he opened up his notebook, writing a couple of notes. Marth would be joined in by two more students as they were already engaged in a conversation. Perking up right away, he grinned as

Roy happened to have the same PE class along with Wolt.

"Hey, looks like we have the same PE class together! This is going to be great!" exclaimed the red head. The green haired boy nodded in response as well, grinning. Marth noticed that Wolt happened to recently get braces.

"Yeah. I'm just hoping we have it easy this year. Having PE last year with Falcon and DK was the worst." Marth winced at the memories. He didn't want to relive through that again so he quickly changed the subject.

"Hey Wolt, when did you get braces?" he asked.

The green haired boy would open his mouth a little and point to it. "Oh these. I just got these things a month ago. If I do really well, I'll have these contraptions out in a year."

More students came in as the three conversed. Singing can be heard as it came closer to the door. The three boys would look up and stare at the door. Roy gave off a weird look, hoping it wasn't who he thought it was.

"FEE FI FO FUM!" it sang with might. "I smell the blood of other students! Be they live, or be they dead, I'll grind their bones to make my bread!" The singer would then barge into the door and laugh at their own joke. It appeared to be a silver haired boy with a happy-go-lucky grin. He always had his eyes closed and that sinister smile, one that made people rather very uneasy. There was nothing wrong with him, or so he thought, but to others, he gave out a very creepy vibe.

Roy would look to his friends and mutter "Oh god. He's in this class."

Marth tilted his head to the side, quite confused. "Who?" Before he could ask more, Roy quickly covered his mouth. Figuring it was a bad time, Marth knew that he's going to get his answer later on. For now, he just began to question what made Roy so uncomfortable around this student. He seemed rather interesting but the blue haired boy felt like he wanted to actually get to know him.

As the minute bell rang, more students would barge into the gym. Marth groaned seeing that he was going to be stuck in PE with Wolf, Falcon and Bowser. However, he happened to notice that he had the same class with Ike. The teacher would come in, holding a clipboard as he looked at the class.

"You all remember me, so there's no need for introductions. For those who are new, the name's Lucario. I'm going to be your PE teacher for the year. Anyways, time to go over roll call." The Pokemon began to read the names in alphabetical order. When Marth's name came up, a couple of snickers could be heard from the football players, which made the boy roll his eyes. After roll call, Lucario would ask for the students to get up and move to a different room so he can go over the classroom procedures.

The three friends got up and started to go down the bleachers to follow the rest of the class until suddenly Marth tripped from the fourth step. His body slammed on the ground with full force, hitting his head on the cold surface of the floor as the sound in the room started to become quieter.

When the blue haired boy regained consciousness, he looked around and noticed that he was in the nurse's office. A strange, dark pink dinosaur creature would approach him. She wore a big red bow on top of her head and sported a nurse's uniform as well.

"Oh thank goodness you're awake. That fall knocked you out pretty hard hun," she exclaimed. Marth would read the nurse's nametag to catch her name before asking what happened.

"I see." He'd paused for a moment, trying to remember what exactly happened. After realizing that he tripped on the bleachers, he looked over to the nurse. "Miss Birdo, what happened?"

"Well, you tripped on the bleachers and hit your head pretty hard. A nice young man brought you in though. He seemed really concerned from the looks of it."

Marth was curious to who even brought him in. He wondered if it was Roy or Wolt but from the sound of it, he happened to be carried here.

"Excuse me miss, if you don't mind telling me, who brought me here?"

She would tap a pen against her clipboard, trying to remember the fellow. "Oh, it was Ike. A rather handsome boy too."

That's the end of that chapter.

I know how Marth feels when you have someone you used to be really good friends with during your childhood and then all the sudden they changed. I'm sure we all had somebody like that. In some cases, some still keep in good contact even if its not close while in others, some completely aren't friends anymore.

Anyways, questions. Again feel free to answer and suggest what should happen next. I'm really liking some of the suggestions I've been getting by the way, so I thank you guys for that.

1. When Marth goes home, should he began to practice Kendo or should he have been doing it awhile as a secret?

2. What chapter do you guys think should be when Marth start's changing his image?

3. Why do you think out of all people, Ike was the one who took him to the nurse's office.

Remember there are no right or wrong answers. These are just questions to get you thinking and to whip up suggestions. ^_^

BONUS QUESTION*this one doesn't have to be answered at all*

*** What's the name of the kid that Roy is really uncomfortable around?**

Anyways, hope you enjoy this chapter.

Chapter 4: Of Mutes and Hexes

Hi guys! I'm back with chapter 4. These chapters are coming out hot and fresh like cookies.

Anyways, thanks for the reviews and my all the suggestions and the ideas you guys are giving me are fantastic. That might also be one of the reasons why I'm whipping up chapter's really fast.

In a nutshell, you guys my readers keep me very motivated.

Two readers got the answer to the bonus question correct. Yes, it is Henry from FE:A.

Also up until now, I couldn't think of name's for my chapters, but now I got them so from here on now, all chapters are getting names. Yay! :D

Anyways, here's chapter 4. I hope you guys enjoy it.

"Ike? You mean, as in Ike Gaiwan?" Marth had to be specific. After all, Ike wasn't fairly a common name but it wasn't unique as his. Birdo nodded in response, handing him a cup full of water as she began to fill out a form indicating that Marth's fine. He'd begin to presume that Ike probably did remember him. It was a strange feeling, but a good feeling nevertheless. Perhaps one day he will gather up the courage to talk to him again. Recalling all the times he spent with Ike only made these feelings even stronger. Learning that Ike took him in only gave him more hope. He just wanted to be friends again with Ike, even if it wasn't a close bond anymore, he just wanted him again. Out of all the friends he had in the world, Marth felt that only Caeda and Ike truly understood him.

He closed his eyes, smiling at all the memories. The smile turned into a soft frown as he remembered that Ike found someone new now. He had a new best friend, Soren. He'd just sigh as Birdo happened to be staring at him.

"You surely space out a lot for you age. Are you sure you're okay?" she asked. Even if she couldn't read his thoughts it seems like the nurse was able to read body language perfectly. Marth would laugh nervously, getting embarrassed that he even spaced out at the nurse's office.

"No, I'm fine. I just like to daydream, that's all." It was true. For one thing, if Marth wasn't engulfed in his thoughts, he spent countless hours daydreaming. If any word could best describe the bluenet, it would be escapist.

Marth would daydream everywhere he went. Assuming that if he wasn't interrupted, his common daydreams consisted of a better self. Everyone adored him, going to him for advice and even leaving him be. Sadly his little drabbles that played in the back of his mind will never be real.

"I see. Anyways, you might as well head back to class. I'm sure your classmates are worried about you." Birdo would hand him the slip before going to tend another student.

He'd take the slip, thanking the dinosaur and headed out to go back to PE. Looking at the clock, it appeared there was only ten minutes left, which was a good thing. Marth hated to admit it, but maybe passing out saved him from the taunts of the football jerks, for now. To kill more time, the blue haired boy would take a detour, taking a good look of the displays. Peeking into the trophy case, he would see a picture of the principal in the middle. It was strange to think that a giant, floating hand was running the school but from all the achievements and rewards it earned, he must be doing something right.

Marth would continue strolling along, opening the door to notice that the students were back at the gym. Heading over to Lucario to hand him the slip, his gaze would be focused on Ike. The spiky haired bluenet was engaged in a conversation with Samus and Sonic. Before he could grab the attention of the teacher, Marth escaped from his thoughts and headed over to Wolt and Roy.

"Are you okay?! I was pretty worried about you!" boasted the greenette.

"Yeah. I was only knocked out for about forty minutes. Luckily there wasn't any serious injury." Marth would look over to Roy, who crossed his arms. The red head seemed to be doing a lot hand gestures to get Marth's attention. Roy sighed, frowning a bit until the two looked at him.

"What's wrong with him?" questioned Marth.

"Long story short, his friend decided to give him a little present." At first, Marth didn't get it until he noticed the silver haired boy from earlier waving at them. He'd look back to Wolt, exchanging confused glances. Whatever the boy did, Roy

couldn't seem to talk anymore.

The bell rang as the football players quickly ran out of the room. Marth's next period happened to be lunch, which in his case either meant more bullying or he'd possibly have it easy. While heading out of the door, the strange boy waved at them once again, giving them that smile before disappearing.

Looking back and forth until the kid was gone, Marth would speak. "Hey Wolt, what even happened? Now that the strange kid's gone, maybe you can explain what exactly that present is."

"Well you see, he cursed him. Roy cannot speak until lunch break is over."

"Really? I'd never thought of anyone to be the type of person to do so."

"Oh believe me, you should be lucky. Rumor has it that the kid is really demented. Obsessed with blood and killing, I'd just say away from him if I were you."

"Yeah, that sounds like a good plan. I don't need more on my plate anyways." He'd sigh. Marth really did envy that creepy kid though, for one, he didn't have to deal with the taunts of the football players. The three would journey on with the other students to the cafeteria.

On their way, Marth would feel a hand on his shoulder. The boy quickly jumped and turned around, hoping that it wasn't Captain Falcon or any of those boys. Turning out to be another greenette, Marth would sigh of relief.

"Merric, don't scare me like that! For a second, I almost thought you were Douglas or even worse, Wario."

"Hehe, sorry about that." The other two would greet the other greenette as he waved. Like Luigi, he wasn't much for words. Thinking about it now, Merric got it worse than Marth. The bluenet remembered meeting during seventh grade. Ever since then, he took him under his wing. It was for the best anyway, knowing that the bullies would be fixated on him instead. They've known him longer than Merric; he'd rather protect his friend than have him get seriously hurt.

The four would barge into the cafeteria, Roy and Merric parting ways as they brought their lunches and sat at their usual table. It was next to the school courtyard. The two would head into the lunch line, getting their change out. For a high school, the meals here were actually pretty good. The principal hired the famous Chef Kawasaki to cook the lunches. Today's options consisted of a chicken Caesar salad, pepperoni pizza, spaghetti and fried chicken.

While waiting, Marth decided to look around and observe the other students. The first table that caught his interest consisted of the cheerleaders. There sat the cheer captain Peach, Daisy, Toadette, Jigglypuff, Amy, Crystal and L'Arachel. From the looks of it, the girls seemed to be engaged in their own world, primarily gossiping. Getting bored, he moved onto the next interesting table consisting of the football players; Captain Falcon, DK, Bowser, Ganondorf, and King Dedede. The boys seemed engrossed in their own world, talking about how they were going to make it the championship this year.

As he moved up in line, Marth would get a better view of the other tables. Looking around, he noticed the table Ike was sitting at. The bluenet was joined by Mario, Sonic, Samus, Isaac, Boyd, Soren and twins Eirika and Ephraim. He remembered that Mario and Boyd were the only football players who didn't hang out with the rest. Isaac and the twins were also a part of the kendo club and Sonic, he was the track team star. While getting closer to the food, he could hear Sonic flaunting his ego.

Moving on, he would go onto the next table. It consisted of the socialites Zelda, Elincia, Ilia, Rosalina, Innes, Pipit and Karane. Like the cheerleaders, they were also engaged in gossip. Last but not least, the table that really interested him was full some band geeks and anime fans. That group consisted of Red, Mist, Lissa, Toad, Pikachu, Lucas, Ricken, Diddy Kong, Lyon and last but not least, Henry. Marth knew right away their group will get bigger once the first meeting of anime club starts again.

The bluenet would finally enter and grab himself some spaghetti. From there on, he grabbed a slice of garlic bread, an apple and some milk. Paying for his meal at the register, he'd head off to their table. The boy would meet up with Caeda, Roy, Wolt, Luigi, Kirby and Merric. He'd sit down next to Merric, greeting the others.

"Hey Marth, do you know where Pit is by any chance?" Roy exclaimed.

"Come to think of it, no." When Roy was about to answer back, they were suddenly interrupted by their favorite angel.

"I'm right here guys!" he beamed. "Oh yeah, I hope you guys don't mind this guy sitting with us. His name's Link. We've bonded over Chemistry and he didn't really know anyone, so I was kind enough to offer him to hang out with us."

"We don't mind. In fact, let's introduce him to the group." stated Wolt. "Anyways, I'll start us off. Hey Link, the name's Wolt. It's a pleasure to meet you." He waved to the Hylian who responded back with a small smile.

Roy frowned, knowing he couldn't greet the elf thanks to the creep's present. So instead, he wrote on a piece of paper, telling Link that his name was Roy.

"The name's Caeda. It's a pleasure to have you sir."

Merric would introduce himself quietly. He was wary of strangers but who could blame him especially if he was Wario's favorite punching bag.

"HI!" beamed Kirby. He heavily grinned at the elf, even going up to shake his hand.

"The name's Luigi. It's a pleasure to-a meet you." The Italian would softly smile at Link.

It was finally Marth's turn. He would give off a sheepish grin and wave. He'd begin to move his hands, practicing his sign language as he spoke.

"Salutations! The name's Marth. It's a pleasure to make your acquaintance." The bluenette than would badger himself in his mind, knowing that he just sounded stupid in front of his AP Pre-Calc classmate and a possible friend.

Before they could expect Link to answer them back, Pit would interrupt them. "Oh yeah! I forgot to mention this. Link's mute, meaning he can't talk. He'll be responding to us by writing his responses on his notebook or what Marth just did now, sign language." The elf would take out his notebook along with a marker and write a message.

'Thank you for your hospitality. I hope to become great friends with you all.' he wrote.

The group would converse with Link, giving him ins and outs of the school. They'll tell him who to be wary of and who to completely stay away from. It seemed like the bullies left Marth off easily during lunch, which was always a good thing. After time has passed, lunch was over. The group parted ways, Marth saying goodbye to his friends as he headed for AP Anatomy and Physiology.

Stepping into the classroom, he would notice that the teacher assigned them seats right away. He'd look at the roster and sign in. Afterwards, he began looking for number nine which was his assigned seat. It was next to the window as he sat down and opened his notebook. Peeking over, he could see that the person sitting next to is number seventeen. More students entered, looking for their assigned seats as well. Marth happened to see the strange kid from his PE class enter. "Who's ready to see some blood? Nya ha, get it? Because we get to dissect dead bodies!" he'd laugh at his own joke, finding himself to be amusing.

The boy would look at the roster and move around. It turns out that he happened to be number seventeen as he sat next to the blue haired teen. Soon, the teacher walked in. He happened to have the height of a second grader as he used a step stool to write on the white board.

"Greetings class. Welcome to Advanced Placement Anatomy and Physiology. I'm Mr. Olimar. Now, before I hand you the syllabus, we're going to do a get to know you activity. As you see, the tables are structured for two people per table. The person you're sitting next to is going to be your partner for the rest of the year so I suggest getting to know them now. I'm going to give you guys about ten minutes to engage in conservation with your partner. After time is up, each of you is going to stand up and introduce your partner to the class. Do you guys understand? Good, now go."

Sighing, Marth would turn to face the strange jokester. The boy waved, giving off that sinister grin once again. From what the bluenet noticed, he never seemed to open his eyes. Another thing is the fact that he looked happy all the time. Marth was set off by it, getting a vibe that was very unnatural. The boy knew right away that the smile was plastered on his face.

"Uh, hi. The name's Marth. It's a pleasure to meet you. I happen to like reading and uh, I think that's it." He felt very awkward around him. Marth was being very cautious with the kid, especially after since he cursed Roy not to talk for a good ninety-five minutes.

The silver haired boy would finally respond. "Marth, is it? Nya ha, you know what your name rhymes with? Darth as in, Darth Vader!" He'd laugh at his own joke. "Anyways, the name's Henry. I happen to like animals, specifically crows and blood, yes blood! I hope we get to dissect human body parts in this class, that'd be a real killer? Get it, killer!" Once again, Henry laughed at his own joke.

Marth was beginning to see why Roy was rather uncomfortable around the boy. He seemed pretty nice, but at the same time he seemed like the guy you wouldn't want to piss off. Henry would break the silence between them.

"Wanna hear a joke? Two Risen, a wyvern and a priest walk into a bar-"

The blue haired boy sighed. This was going to be a long junior year.

Done with chapter 4. Depending on how I manage my time, Chapter's 5 and possibly 6 might be up Wednesday evening due to the fact that I have a test to study for. I'll try to get Chapter 5 up and ready by Sunday.

I've hoped you enjoyed this chapter. The characters that weren't listed in Marth's observation don't have cliques, meaning they're just normal students. They're still important, just as anyone else.

Anyways, I'm up for ideas and suggestions for chapter 5.

Question time!

1. Which character(s) are you enjoying so far?(It's too early to ask who's your favorite, so I'm holding that question off until later)
2. What do you think makes Marth such an easy bullying target?
3. Do you have any other Nintendo characters you want to see. Post them here and I'll take a look at their wiki pages ;)

I've hoped you guys enjoyed this chapter!

Chapter 5: Fear and Loathing

Hello guys! I'm back with the next chapter. I got a bit emotional writing this one, but then again, who doesn't feelings when writing some serious stuff?

Thanks for reviewing guys once again. I always like reading them. And yes, Henry is similar to Russia in a sense(thanks for the cookie btw BigSisterJanel).

I'm thinking about doing something before I start each chapter. For now on, I'm going to label the characters and their respective games for those who aren't from/in the SSB games.

Other than that, here's chapter five!

List of characters that aren't from SBB

Henry(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Malon(Legend of Zelda: Ocarina of Time)
Gaius(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Waluigi(Super Mario Brothers)
Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Titania(Fire Emblem 9/10)

AP Anatomy and Physiology went slower than Marth wanted it to. Just hearing Henry jabber on and on about the most awkward subjects made him want to bang his head against his desk. From the looks of it, he'd rather get a noogie from Wario than bear more of Henry's constant chatter. Eventually time was up as Olimar would stand on the stepstool, holding his hands up to get everybody's attention.

"Everyone, may I have your attention please. Time's up! Now, who would like to begin to introduce themselves first?"

The students would look around, exchanging looks with one another as no one volunteered. Marth would just look out the window until he had to hear the silver-haired crow boy.

"Me! Me! Me!" he exclaimed. Sighing at having to go first, the bluenet figured it was better to get it over with than to be the last one. Henry would stand up, holding his right finger while pointing up.

"Hey guys, what's up? Anyways, this blue haired kid right here, his name's Marth. He happens to enjoy reading. About what, I don't know but I'll leave that up to you guys." The teen grinned that iconic smile as he sat down. Marth heavily sighed, getting up to introduce his lab partner.

"Um, hello." He paused, hearing a few coughs as the students in the classroom focused directly on him. "My lab partner's named Henry. He happens to really like animals." The bluenet quickly sat down, his face turning red. He was heavily embarrassed on how he was introduced. Now he was worried that people would think he read romance novels or even worse, porn magazines. Marth sighed, wishing that he could leave his own body for the day or switch places with someone else.

He hated being the center of attention. First of all, it would only cause people to stay away from him and second, he could possibly get them to start rumors about him. He sighed, his thoughts trailing off as the other students introduced themselves. Marth never fully realized it until now that he actually didn't like being here. The students made him uneasy, the bullies didn't help either and the fact that he wasn't too fond of being in the spotlight.

Out of all the things he could have been, why did he have to be Marth Lowell? Why couldn't he be Caeda, hell why couldn't he be Douglas? For all his life, the bluenet lived in constant fear. Everything he seemed to do either offended somebody or turned into a rumor. He'd quickly shake his head, looking over to the other final set of students who were being introduced.

"*I need to start focusing. I can't keep daydreaming all the time. If I keep continuing on like this, I'm only going to make myself said again. Come on self, get it together already!"* Marth would give himself a pep talk in his mind, facing the final pair.

An orange-brown haired boy would stand up, introducing a girl with fiery, red hair. He seemed to have a lollipop in his mouth; his backpack seemed to be filled with dozens of delectable goodies.

"Yo! This chick here's Malon. I know she dig's me but I ain't the one for red heads. I'd rather be with a shaggy dog before I hook up with her." he teased. The girl dubbed Malon glared at him, rolling his eyes while mouthing something inaudible. She'd stand up, baring a smirk before introducing the rude guy.

"Hi y'all. This jerk I'm sittin' next to is Gaius. Don't mind his mannerisms though, he's known for having a sweet tooth." After Malon finished, she'd sight down telling Gaius that she was going to kick his ass after school. Olimar cleared his throat, looking over his students.

"Is that everyone? Good." He'd hop down from the stepstool, handing everyone a syllabus. The teacher went over the syllabus, even going through the lab procedures. When he finished, he would hand out a couple of more forms, one being the unit 1 study guide, another being the lab rules and finally, an acknowledgement that you've read the lab procedures. It was required to get signed and was due no later than Wednesday.

The class was dismissed early since Olimar had to go to a meeting. He told his students to be good before heading off. Marth bolted out of the classroom to lose Henry, not wanting to hear more of his jokes or some strange anime he's never even heard off. In fact, Marth didn't even watch anime. He felt that it was too childish and didn't pertain to his interests at all. The bluenet would head to the water fountain. As he bent down to get a sip, he tripped with full force, getting wet as he toppled onto the ground, landing on his bottom. His glasses flew off, bouncing across the floor. Marth would crawl, looking for them right away.

"Looking for these?" said a devilish voice. Marth nodded in response as the figure handed him his spectacles. The bluenet hastily put them on right away going to thank the figure but instead, he trembled in fear.

Wario and Waluigi would grin wide, laughing as they watched the boy squirm.

"Wah hah hah, going somewhere?" The heavier one of the two approached Marth, inching very close to his face.

"N-no! I-I was just getting a drink of w-water!" Marth stuttered, his bodily shaking like a lost puppy. Waluigi exchanged looks with his brother, not buying his lie. Wario would grab Marth by his shirt collar, lifting him up and slamming him against the wall. The bluenet yelped, whimpering as the Italian inched his face very close to his. Their noses barely touched, Wario mouthing some cruel words to Marth. Afterwards, he dropped the frail boy as he gagged.

The azure haired boy felt like he was going to throw up, especially after catching a glimpse of Wario's breath. He began to gasp for air, looking very pathetic as he collapsed to the floor.

"Brother let me have a turn too!" begged Waluigi. Wario would look at his brother, stepping aside as he'd let him have his turn. The tall, lanky Italian grinned as he approached Marth and kicked him in the stomach. Marth clutched on to it, coughing up a bit of blood. The brothers laughed and ran off from the scene before it could gather any attention.

Marth laid on the floor for a couple of minutes, trying catch his breath. He'd slowly manage to get up and ran straight for the nearest bathroom. He'd head into a stall, locking it behind him as he sat on a closed toilet, sobbing. The pain hurt so much. The bluenet knew he was in for a nightmare this year and he couldn't take it anymore. After wailing for a good two minutes, the delicate boy came out of the stool and got a good look of himself in the mirror.

Until now, he never realized how much he despised his entire existence. He saw a pathetic looking boy with shaggy, unkempt blue hair with the thickest pair of glasses looking at him. Marth felt ugly. He usually wasn't the type of boy to care so much about his appearance, but just looking at himself made him want to puke. Everything about himself he hated. He hated how pathetic and weak he was, he hated how he couldn't stick up for himself. He tried once, but it failed. Marth would continue to look at his reflect, feeling disgusted by himself.

"You're pathetic," he thought out loud. The boy blinked, seeing the reflection in the mirror smirk sadistically. He'd rub his eyes, thinking he was seeing things but the smirk was still there. Suddenly, his reflection spoke to him.

"You're stupid, weak, grotesque, and don't deserve anyone. I loathe you more than anyone else. Out of everyone, I think you should drop dead from the face of the earth. Nobody would miss you anyways. You think you have friends? Well look at here buster, they just pretend to be your friends because they feel sorry for you. Maybe if you'd do something for once, people would actually like you. They're tired of your shit Marth. Just face the fact, they hate you. "he told himself. The teenager would pinch his stomach, squeezing it. "Look at you, you're fat too. No wonder nobody will ever love you. Hell, that's probably why Ike abandoned you in the first place. After all, you're the anchor that was holding him down."

Marth felt a quiver down his spine. "No… it's not true. My friends, they… they like me! What makes you think that?"

The reflection laughed. "What makes me think that?! Wow, you're more stupid than I thought. Look at you, always wanting

people to feel sorry for you. If I'm not mistaken, you're probably the reason why your parents got into that car accident in the first place Fuck, if you didn't have an asthma attack in the first place, they still would've been here."

The boy wobbled, tears running down his cheeks as he looked away from the mirror. "Stop, please. I beg of you, please stop." He sobbed into his hands. Everything his reflection said was true. Marth remembered that day like it was yesterday.

The fateful even happened six years ago.

Marth was only ten years old back then. The young boy would happily be playing scrabble with his sister. Elice was excited, especially since her parents finally allowed her to babysit her little brother on her own at the age of fourteen. It was a big responsibility, but she knew she could handle it or so she thought. Around eight PM, Marth started coughing frantically. Panicking, she would look for her little brother's inhaler, only to see that it needed another refill.

She quickly called the emergency number, begging for the ambulance to come right away. Trying to be brave, the bluenette phoned her parents next.

"Please pick up, please pick up, please pick up!" she muttered over and over again. The young teen felt her body shaking hoping either her mother or father would pick up in the nick of time. Thankfully, someone answered.

"Hello?" answered Cornelius.

"Father!" panicked Elice."It's an emergency! Marth's having an asthma attack and he needs another refill on his inhaler." She finally broke down crying. "Please come to the hospital right away when the ambulance gets up."

Sounding concerned, Cornelius will tell his daughter that Marth was going to be alright. Before hanging up he told her that he was on his way and that he loved her.

The ambulance soon arrived, taking Marth and Elice to the hospital right away. When they arrived, they told Elice to sit outside the waiting room as they went to treat her brother right away. From what it looked like, he was possibly in code blue.

The bluenette shivered and looked up at the TV. Maybe watching it will keep her mind at ease. The hospital has the television set to the news as a female Toad seemed to be at the scene of a collision.

"Good evening Brawlville. Mary Toad here with the news, a fatal collision just happened recently outside the city. From the information that the police gathered, a couple in their car was going over 80 mph and crashed into a truck. The truck driver was fine, but from the news, the couple didn't make it. Luckily they had their identification cards on them."

The news would display a picture of Cornelius and Liza Lowell. Elice's mouth dropped as the girl got off her seat and dropped herself on the floor. She began sobbing, trying to blare out the news from her ears. The news station honored the two especially since her father was CEO of a huge business company and her mother was a famous fashion designer. What pained her even more was that Marth didn't know.

The fourteen year old passed out. After two hours, she woke up. The nurses told her that her brother was going to be alright and suggested that she spend the night with him.

Elice would enter the room Marth was being held at. Her brother would face her, giving her a weak smile. How could she tell him that their parents just died. Approaching him slowly, she would pet his hair softly and stroke his face.

"Elice? Where's mother and father?" he asked. She looked down, pausing for a minute. A minute later, she finally spoke.

"They're not with us anymore. They went off… to a better place"

The Marth in the reflection would pause, watching himself cry. "Come on, please man up for once. I can help you do so?"

"Really?"

"Yes. All you have to do is show those bullies who you really are. In fact, don't show them who you really are. What you need to do is change yourself?"

"How would I be able to do that?"

The reflection would take some time to think. "Change your image. Actually take care of your hair for once, lose weight, get contacts. With that, you can show them. Make your way into the popular life. If you do so, you can get close to Ike again. Knowing him, he'd love it."

"Come to think of it, you're right. I'm sick of people pushing me around! I've been letting them get away from it for far too long! It ends here right now! I'll show them, I'll show them all! Every single one of them!" Marth would laugh hysterically, losing his mind.

"That's the spirit. Now, get heading to your last class of the day before you get tardy." Marth nodded and noticed that his reflection in the mirror once again looked like himself. The bluenet would storm out of the bathroom and head to his final class of the day, AP English.

The bluenet would quickly sit down next near the exit. A woman would enter the classroom. She had long, vibrant red hair that was braided. She would hand the students each a syllabus before heading back to her desk.

"Welcome to AP English. I'm Miss Titania and I'll be your teacher for the year. If you think this class is going to be easy, you're mistaken." Like the other teachers, Titania went over the syllabus. Marth spaced out, being heavily fixated on analyzing himself. He quickly went back from being fine to self-loathing again.

Eventually school would end, everyone running out for freedom. Marth slumped as he headed outside. He slowly walked past the gate, not noticing Caeda was waiting for him. The bluenette would notice his posture right away and approached him.

"Marth is something wrong?" she asked.

"No... It's nothing." She sighed, knowing that he was lying off the bat.

"I can tell something's bothering you." Caeda moved closer, just to be lightly shoved back.

"JUST LEAVE ME ALONE OKAY?!" he snapped. Marth would dash, going far away from her as he can.

Being shocked, Caeda would look at the direction he ran in. "Marth, wait!" She chased after her friend.

Little did they know, someone saw the whole scene. The figure bore a different school uniform, watching them. They seemed to be fixated on Marth more than Caeda. Perhaps they knew something about him that no one else knew.

That's it for Chapter 5. In the next Chapter, the kendo thing will finally be introduced! We will finally learn if he's been doing it in secret or starts it.

I had a lot of fun writing this chapter.

Anyways, you guys know the drill. Give me suggestions in what you want to see for Chapter 6. Remember, he's finally home now so he can finally relax. The poor thing needs a break anyways.

Questions
1. How would you think the story would be like if Marth's parents were still alive today?
2. Later on, I'm thinking of making chapters that don't include Marth. I feel that way, we can get to know the other characters. Do you think I should do this? If I do so, should I give you guys a list of characters and let you choose who you want the main focus to be for that chapter?
3. Should any of the characters be related to one another as cousins? If so, who(be realistic on the races though. Like its obvious that Fox can't be related to Falco.) Remember, this is an alternative universe so you can have fun with it.

BONUS QUESTION
*** For this one this time, I'm not going to tell you if you're right or wrong, especially since it'll be a spoiler. Anyways, here it goes.**

Who do you think is the mysterious figure who was watching Marth and Caeda?

EDIT: I thought of this last minute and thought ahead for a possible plan of chapter seven. I put up a poll so check out my profile and vote!

Chapter 6: Prince

Hello! I am back with Chapter 6!

For those who didn't get to read the temporary author's note in time, I'll tell you what it was in a nutshell. It was basically me being all mushy and thanking all my readers/viewers/reviews for everything they've done so far and what not. And I shall put two of the questions that I've answered on here as well.

For those who played FE:A and are asking about the second gen characters, yes can be added. Like for an example, Chrom and Lissa will be brother and sister, while Lucina and Owain are cousins, but are no way related to Chrom and Lissa.

As for Link, he is going to be joining kendo club. Since he's the new guy, I see him having an important role in this story as well.

Last but not least(I'll be addressing this at the end too), there's a poll on my profile page that's asking for how you guys want chapter 7 to go. If you have an account, you can vote at the poll, but for guests, just look at the options and place it in the comments section.

Other than that, here's chapter six.

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Jagen(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)

Bolting through the neighborhood, the blue haired boy jumped, hiding behind giant tree to lose Caeda. He felt bad for what he had done earlier; he just wanted some time alone. Marth would take out his cellphone, taking a glance at the time every minute. After three minutes passed, he came out of hiding and headed home.

Arriving at his house, Marth noticed that Elice's car was in the driveway along with another. Sighing, he forced himself to put a smile on his face, getting his key out and opening the door. Marth never told Elice what happens at school. He didn't want to worry her especially knowing that she has college and on top of it, work. He entered, closing the door behind him and placed his backpack on the couch. Marth headed into the kitchen, only to be greeted by both Elice and Jagen.

"Welcome back!" said his sister. "How was your first day?"

"Aw, it was nothing. You know the usual, going over the syllabus and all that junk. Other than that, my day was great!" lied Marth. The two adults smiled, being glad to hear that the young boy was doing well. The young junior noticed Jagen and grinned hard.

"It took you awhile to notice me son," said the older gentleman. Jagen knew the two Lowell siblings since they day they were conceived. He was their legal guardian and had known their parents for a long time. If Marth was in trouble, he always went to Jagen right away. That man helped him get through so much, even if he sometimes told his troubles in a little story. After all, if the boy told him something really frightening, the elder might tell his sister. Jagen softly smiled, gripping on a wooden sword. Clearing his throat, the older man broke the silence and spoke.

"Have you been practicing?" he asked. Marth nodded in response. Jagen closed his eyes and grinned. "Well then, how about a practice round? I need to see how far you've gotten since we've last trained."

"Sounds plausible," responded the bluenet. "I'll meet you at the dojo so you can go on ahead without me!" Marth headed out of the kitchen, grabbing his backpack along the way. From there, he'd run upstairs and into his room. Placing his book bag neatly on his bed, he'd open his closet, going through every set of clothes before grabbing the garb he wore when he did kendo.

Marth began to change, taking his uniform top off first, changing into his keikogi. Next, he removed his pants, replacing them with his hakama. After he finished, he would grab his wooden sword along with his cotton towel and headed down stairs. The adolescent headed towards the backyard and went outside. For such a small two story house, their backyard was huge. Marth loved every bit of it, especially since it reminded him of a castle courtyard that he saw in travel brochures.

On top of a small hill in the backyard was the dojo. Taking a deep breath, Marth stumbled upon inside to be greeted by Jagen once again. The old man was already dressed up, drinking some green tea on the side as he got up.

"Are you ready Marth?" he asked. The chap nodded, getting his position ready. He would grab his cotton towel, placing it on his forehead and tied it up. Afterwards, he grabbed his sword waiting for Jagen to signal him. The older man held his hand up, counting to three. Once his fingers went to three, he gave Marth the signal to strike at him.

The young bluenet nodded, plunging at Jagen. He would block Marth's move, quickly going to an open spot. Seeing this, Marth responded very quickly, blocking the attack. The two would go on for a good thirty minutes until Marth won. He panted, catching his breath as he beamed. Marth was proud that he finally beat Jagen.

The old man smiled, offering him some green tea. "You've come a long way but in the end, you've finally did it. I'm proud of you. Your parents would also be proud of you." The two would move to a small table, sitting on their knees as they rested.

"Marth, do you know who'll really be proud of you?" he asked.

Marth shook his head as he tilted it to the side, wondering who Jagen was even talking about.

"Your ancestor of course." He pointed to an old painting that sat on the wall next to them. It was a portrait of a young boy, about Marth's age. He had the same azure hair and eyes, but unlike Marth, he had a more slender built. The boy happened to look more feminine as well. He wore a blue tunic along with a blue cape. What stuck out the most in the picture was the golden tiara he was on his head.

"Who is he Jagen?" he asked innocently. Marth seen his ancestor's portrait before, but never really bothered taking a good look until now.

"You see son, his name was Marth. Your father was always fascinated by his family's history and loved him dearly. That's how he in your mother met in the first place. They were like two little geeks in love, bonding over their love for the prince of Altea. In fact, when you were born, they both loved the name so much they've decided to name you after him."

"Wow." Marth was astonished. Him, being related to a prince?! The boy found it hard to believe at first, but he accepted it. Jagen would get up, extending his hand, offering to help him get up. Marth put his hand on his, getting up as Jagen went to the edge of the dojo. He motioned for the adolescent to follow him as he approached an old wooden box.

"This is your family's most prized possession." He opened the box slowly, revealing the golden tiara the prince wore. "This heirloom has been passed down for many generations. Your father told me to give this to you when the time was right. Today, I felt that you've proved that you were more than a boy. To me, today is the day when you finally became a man. So, this is my gift to you." Jagen closed the box, handing it to Marth.

"I can have this?" he asked. The gentleman nodded in return.

"Thank you, thank you, thank you!" beamed the boy in excitement. Marth looked at the box then back to Jagen.

"Say Jagen? I have a question to ask you."

"Spill it out boy."

"My school has a kendo club and I was wondering, do you think I should join? I mean, I've been practicing with you since I was twelve and, I figured that I wouldn't want this skill to go to waste. I would love to participate in tournaments, make new friends, test my skills out, you know." Marth always wanted to join a club, but was too afraid. Now after hearing Jagen's words and getting the reward, he felt a nice boost of self-confidence.

"Of course. I feel that you would be getting more out of your school rather than if you keep training with me. Besides, I ain't getting younger, that's for sure." Marth was about to speak until Elice came into the dojo.

"There you guys are! I've been looking everywhere for you. Anyways, Marth take a quick bath and start getting ready. We're going to the mall for your hair appointment and get some school supplies on the way out. "She told him. " Before I forget, if you have any particular hairstyle you want in mind, I suggest printing that out as well before we go."

Elice would leave afterwards, heading back into the house to finish up on her homework. The two men headed back inside. Jagen would say his goodbyes before heading out. He told the two to be good for him as he was going out on a business trip tomorrow morning.

Marth headed upstairs into his room, grabbing a t-shirt along with fresh underwear, jeans and socks. He entered the bathroom, running the bathwater on as he went on the family computer and double clicked on Google Chrome, starting up the internet browser.

The boy would check his Smashbook account before logging out. He opened up Caeda's profile, sending her a private message as he wrote an apology for his actions earlier. After he finished, he logged out and typed 'Marth Lowell' into the search tab. The boy was directed to Google as he clicked images. Finding the perfect picture of the prince's face, he printed it out before heading back to take his bath.

Marth would sit in the tub, thinking to himself as he let his body soak.

"*Maybe joining the kendo club will be a great idea after all. I mean, Ike's the captain and I can finally thank him. Of course I got to muster up the courage to do so. Yeah, I'm going to march into the club right after school tomorrow. I mean, the club fair's tomorrow so I get to see if I'll like it or not. Besides, like Jagen said, this will open up more opportunities. Who knows, I might even start getting popular, then again, that's only a dream.*"

He sighed, opening up the drain as he got up, drying his body off and getting changed. Marth would turn on the vent to help the steam out before leaving the bathroom. The boy headed towards the computer, grabbing the piece of paper as he met Elice downstairs.

"Ready?" Clutching onto the piece of paper, Marth nodded. Elice noticed and looked at it with curiosity. "What's that?"

"Oh, it's just the haircut I want." He'd open it up, showing the picture of Prince Marth. Elice seemed surprised, but she looked pleased.

"That'll look great on you! Good choice." The two would head out into the car and get in. Elice started backing out of the driveway, looking both ways to make sure no other cars were coming. Once she was clear, she backed out, put the gear to drive and started heading towards the mall.

"Are there any other plans after this sis? I really don't have any homework today so I was wondering if we were doing anything fun afterwrads." piped the bluenet.

"Well, after our errands, we're going to meet up with our cousins for dinner. You up for Japanese food tonight?" she asked.

"Of course."

They've finally arrived at the mall as Elice parked next to a small tree. The two got out of a car, locking it behind them. They'd enter inside, heading towards the salon to check Marth in.

A woman with platinum blonde hair sat at the front desk, filing her nails. Elice approached the desk, clearing her throat to get the lady's attention. Her name-tag read Susan.

"Excuse me; I'll like to check in please." The lady perked up. "Oh, the Lowells' are here! Gloria is ready so you can head over Marth."

A pink Yoshi would motion Marth to come over. "Hey cutie, what do you have for me this time, the usual?" Shaking his head, Marth handed her the piece of paper. Gloria opened it, looking quite fascinated and turned to him. "Wow, this'll look great on you! Let's get started!"

She began washing his hair, using the finest shampoo and conditioner that the salon has to offer. After he was finished, Gloria would lead him to his chair, telling him to sit while she got out the scissors. The Yoshi suggested for him to remove his glasses, not wanting those to get dirty. The boy did so, placing them on the counter in front of him as she began working her magic.

Thirty minutes later, she began to blow-drying and styling his hair. After Gloria finished, she handed Marth's glasses back to him.

"Put them on and tell me what you think." Listening to her, Marth did as he was told. He placed them on his face, looking in the mirror. *"Is this really me?"* he thought. The boy was amazed on his transformation, noticing that changing his hair really made a huge difference. It brought out his prominent features more as he continued looking at himself. *"Maybe later on tonight I can use Elice's tweezers to fix up my eyebrows."*

"Wow, this looks… amazing Gloria. You did a really great job!" Gloria beamed at his response. They both headed

towards the cash register to pay as well as give the pink Yoshi her tip.

"Marth, you look so handsome!" exclaimed his sister. Elice was really excited to see her brother's new do. In fact, she was more than pleased that he looked like the splitting image of Prince Marth himself. A big grin was plastered on his face, being more proud than ever. After they finished paying, the two headed out of the salon to get basic school supplies.

"Hey Elice?" addressed the bluenet. "I was wondering, after this can we go to the eye store. I was thinking about trying contacts. I mean, I like my glasses and all, but I fear that I might break them on accident someday."

She looked puzzled by his odd request, but nodded in agreement. They went into the office supply store and picked up some paper, pencils, pens and notebooks. From thereafter, the two went into the eye store. The man working there would check up on Marth's eyes, helping him find the right pair. A few minutes later, he would hand him his new contacts along with solution, a case and another pair thrown in free.

The duo walked out of the store. Once again, Marth piped out a question. "I know this seems really sudden as well, but mind if I get some new clothes. I've never realized it until now that I've been wearing the same style for over four or five years now. I just want to try something new."

Not objecting her brother's wishes, Elice and Marth entered a couple of clothing stores. From there, Marth picked out the trendiest clothes. He would study the magazine to see what styles were in and which ones were out. After the two finished, they'd leave the mall. Elice turned to her brother and noticed how delighted he looked. The last time she could recall seeing him like that was when he was ten years old, just before their parents died.

"I've notice that you look really happy Marth." She brought up. "I haven't seen you this happy in six years. I guess you really did need change after all. To me, I see it as a change for the better."

"Mmhmm!" he responded, nodding. The two entered the car, driving off to meet their cousins at the Japanese restaurant. Little did she know, the future had something in store for them. Perhaps Marth's change might actually be for the worst.

I bet you guys didn't see that coming now, did you. If you did, have a cookie of your preference.

Anyways, for him changing, I was thinking of doing a slow transition because I feel that Marth doing a complete 360 sounds very unrealistic to me. Plus, that way it gives you guys the chance to get to know the other characters in the story, like for an example, Link(since I see him coming up a lot in the reviews). Also it helps the development of the story(and myself) as well as helps me get its direction.

Other than that, here's another reminder for the poll that's on my profile page. If you have an account, vote there, for guest, post it in the review. Since I feel generous, for guests, here are you options for who you want chapter seven to focus on.

A)the mystery person at the end of Chapter 5
B)Link
C)Ike

The poll will be opened up until I pretty much post Chapter 7. Speaking of it, it will not be up until late Wednesday night or on a very early Thursday morning. I say this because I have a test on Wednesday that I need to study for, so this gives you guys some time to vote.

Also, let me mention this. You guys can also suggest things that you want to happen in the future. I've realized until now I forgot to mention it, which I apologize for, but let's say if you want, for an example Marth to screw up a friendship in Chapter 10, just mention it. Since this is drama after all, if you have any ideas that will definitely cause feels, give them to me.

One more thing. When I put chapter seven up, I'm going to have another poll up and running early so this time you guys actually will have more time to think about it and vote. Like I've stated earlier, since I'm feeling generous, I decided to tell you want the next poll is ahead of time so it gives you guys a chance to think about what you want. And have a chance to vote early too.

The next poll question is...

+ Which of the clubs would you like to see have a chapter after Kendo club?

1) ROTC(military/army)

2) Cheerleading Practice
3) Art Club
4) School News Club
5) Anime Club

Anyways, question time!

1) Do you think Marth should attempt to get to know Link more in Chapter 8.
2) What do you think Marth should do at school to show them that he's a changed man
3) This is going to happen later on, but when Marth does get popular, what do you think he'll start doing(ex. slacking off, underaged drinking, drugs, things that teens do in high school that they aren't supposed to do)

Bonus Question
*** Who do you think is Marth and Elice's cousins?**

Chapter 7: Link's First Day

Hello guys, I'm finally back with Chapter 7! The votes came in pretty close between Link and the mystery person at Chapter 5, but Link managed to take the lead by one vote!

I'm honestly quite glad because I got burned out after taking the test(thank god I got an A) and if there was a tie, I would of written both of their segments and trying to write on a burnt out brain isn't any fun.

So thank you for the guys who voted. For those who voted for the mystery person, don't worry you get to learn some tidbits about them in this chapter. If you know who it is or you think you do, you can guess in the review. :)

Anyways, here's Chapter 7 along with Link!

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Rusl(Legend of Zelda: Twilight Princess)
Elincia(Fire Emblem: Path of Radiance/Radiant Dawn)
Aryll(Legend of Zelda: Wind Waker)
Uli(Legend of Zelda: Twilight Princess)
Collin(Legend of Zelda: Twilight Princess)

The first day of school came to an end. Students stormed out of their classrooms, heading out the doors to go home and relax. The Hylian stepped out from his last class of the day and began to head towards the double doors. Stepping outside, he saw some students engaged in conversation, but what really grabbed his attention was the scene between Marth and Caeda. Wanting to get a better glimpse to understand what was going on; he started walking their direction, just to notice something else.

The elf saw someone standing under a tree, watching the scene that the two blue haired teenagers caused. Getting a better look of the person, Link noticed right away that their uniform attire wasn't of this school. Before he could get a really good synopsis, the Hylian accidently bumped into someone and fell back.

"Ack!"

He winced for a moment, quickly getting up from the concrete. Looking at the person he collided into, it turned out to be another Hylian. Unlike him, this one happened to be a female. She had crystal blue eyes, long, brunette hair that was braided and gave an elegant aura. Link offered his hand, helping her up from the ground. Afterwards, he picked up her belongings and handed it to her as well.

Smiling in embarrassment, he chuckled a little and scratched the back of his head. The girl looked to him as if trying to remember something before speaking.

"Sorry about that," she said. "I guess we weren't paying attention before we crashed into each other." Smiling, she'd offer her hand out.

"I take it you're the new guy I've been hearing about around school. It's a pleasure to meet you, the name's Zelda." She added. Zelda motioned her hands, doing sign language as she spoke. Nodding in response, Link took her hand, shook it, and answered back.

'*It's nice to meet you Zelda. The name's Link. I've just moved into town recently, so…'* Before Link could finish, someone interrupted.

"Zelda! Are we going are what?!" Looking over, he saw another girl who also wore an elegant aura, but unlike Zelda, she had green hair. The Hylian girl giggled, looking over to her friend, then to Link.

"Sorry about that," apologized the brunette. "Elincia can really be impatient sometimes. In fact, let me do this before I go." The school girl opened up her book bag, grabbing her notebook along with her pen. Popping it open, she began writing something. After finishing, Zelda tore up the page, handing it to Link.

"Here you go. In case you're wondering what I'm handing you, it's pretty much a piece of paper with my email address and skype. I would have given you my phone number as well, but knowing that you're mute, it wouldn't be right. Instead, I figured maybe skype calling would work better for us. Perhaps we could video chat sometime during this week. Either way, I hope to hear more from you soon." She'd wave before saying goodbye, running over to catch up with her friend.

Link stood there dumbfounded, watching the young Hylian woman leave. Something about her bothered him and not in the bad kind of way either.

Thinking back on that thought, Link knew from the start that she was beautiful. Zelda wasn't like most of the other girls in the school. She was rather mature for her age and happened to be very polite. A small smile formed upon his face just thinking about her before realizing that he was still at the school yard. Link looked around, noticing the decreasing number of students that were hanging out and starting heading towards the bike rack.

Little did he know, someone was watching his conversation with the lovely Zelda. The figure happened to be a quite muscular male who sported a red pompadour.

"Who does that new kid think he is, getting close to Zelda like that?!" the figured complained. A hint of jealousy can be heard in his voice. Two of his friends happened to be standing with him as well; one being lanky with a blonde bowl cut while the other was short, stubby and had a deep indigo hair color.

The tall one would be giving his friend a back massage while the shorter one gave him a hand massage.

"Whoever that new kid is, I will make sure he doesn't get close to Zelda as my name isn't Groose."

Link hopped onto his bike, riding out of the school. He went on the street, taking the scenic route that he've took this morning. It was full of blossoming flowers, green grass and darling townhouses. Passing by, he noticed a local bakery. Being curious, he braked and hopped off his bike, placing it on the side of the bench. Entering, the aroma of fresh baked goods whiffed in his nostrils. He was greeted by the owner as he looked around.

The Hylian picked up a fresh loaf of bread, a slice of sugar toast, a dozen cookies and a Deku Scrub plushie that was bundled with homemade chocolates. He'd approach the cash register, paying the owner and bowed down, thanking him. Afterwards, Link headed out of the bakery and hopped back on his bike, taking off.

He'd continue off his journey by looking at the neighborhood, noticing that he was approaching the richer part of Brawlville. As he came closer to more of the bigger houses, his eyes trailed off to something that caught his interest. A couple of girls walked in front of him, chatting on about their day. What intrigued him was the fact that they happened to have the same outfit as the mystery person from earlier. Stopping for a bit, Link would perk up, reading the sign.

It read Dairanto All Girls Academy. The Hylian figured right away that this happened to be a private school. Placing his hands on his chin, he went into intense thought. What Link wanted to know is what a girl from the academy was doing back at Burazazu High. Not wanting to get too deep in his thoughts, Link jumped on his bike and continued onward. After riding a couple of minutes more, he'd reach the outskirts of town.

Eventually Link reached his house, coming to a complete stop as he placed his bike in the garage. He happened to live at a farm as the sounds of cows and cuccos could be heard. Link knocked on the door, opening it as he stepped inside. A little girl would perk up from the couch and grinned wide when her eyes laid on him.

"Welcome back big brother!" she beamed. The little girl hopped off the couch, lunging at Link as they both fell on the floor. A loud thud could be heard as it got the attention of an older man. He looked to be around his late twenties to early thirties. The man had blonde hair along with a short beard. Coming out from the den, he looked at the scene and smiled.

"Oh Link, you're home. Great timing!" he exclaimed. "I need you to round up the goats while I go pick up Uli and Colin. " Link nodded in response, heading to his room to get changed into simple work clothes. He'd take off his uniform, tossing it on his bed as he put a t-shirt over his head along with some khaki pants. After he finished, he'd head out.

"Aww, can I watch Link too Rusl?" whined the little girl. Ruffling her hair, he replied "Of course Aryl."

The older man would grab the car keys before heading out. Looking over, a soft smile would form as he watched the two siblings head out to the farm.

"If you were still alive today, you'd be very proud of your grandchildren. They've grown up as wonderful kids, I'm sure you can see it too." Rusl opened the door, hopping into his truck before taking off.

The two blonde Hylian children finally arrived. Link took out a small ocarina, playing simple a little song. A few minutes later, a horse galloped towards him and came close. Link petted her mane before hopping on to put the goats in their stables. Aryl leaned against the fence, watching him.

"Hey Link? Can I ride Epona sometime?" she asked. The Hylian laughed a little, giving her a sly grin. Aryl pouted in

response, giving her older brother the look. Softly sighing, the elf nodded telling her that someday she could ride his horse. The two would go off to herd the goats. While in thought, Link figured that he will probably enjoy his time living in Brawlville.

That's the end of Chapter 7. Sorry if it was short and simple, but I wrote most of it on Wednesday. Chapter 8 will be starting another school chapter along with getting introduced to Club Day!

I also tend to update really fast because I have a huge writing muse and when I get those, my head sparks with a bunch of ideas as well as your guys' suggestions and ideas spark me too. Also it's probably because this is my first year of college and to say the least, the scheduling here is more leisure like than it was in high school for me.

I will eventually slow down when I know the chapter's going to take a lot longer to write/a test gets in the way.

Now, I've officially placed the second poll on my profile. I added more options along with the names of the characters(who are the SSB games) that are in the club. You have up to four options this time you can vote for. Same goes for guests, so if you only voted for one, you have three more. This poll will most likely be closed when I get close to the end of the day in the second day of school.

Same deal goes, if two or three(or even four) get a tie, I will write about all the winning clubs.

If you want to see something happen in Chapter 8, suggest it to me. Also, always feel free to suggest ideas and whatnot for the plot.

Now, question time.

1. Do you think Captain Falcon and DK will recognize Marth tomorrow when he heads to school?

2. What class period should club day start at(ie, using Marth's schedule for an example, should it start at History, Pre-Calc, PE, Anatomy and Physiology or English?). Keep in mind that it's pretty much like attending an assembly so it takes a whole class period.

3. I've decided Marth is going to try to get to know Link more in Chapter 8. How should he approach this

4. Now, pairing talk. Please note that these pairings aren't the permanent ones and this is high school, so people are going to date and dump like flies. Give me suggestions for temp pairings to cause some drama and whatnot(you can suggest characters that appeared going to appear that aren't from the Smash verse as well).

Other than that, I will probably have Chapter 8 up around Saturday or Sunday, depending on how I can control this burning muse.

Chapter 8: History Class Surprise

Hey guys, guess who predicted too early and ended up finishing Chapter 8 today? This gal.

Anyways, thanks for the reviews and stuff and I managed to make this chapter a big longer this time.

Next chapter should be fun to write because it completely focuses on clubs and whatnot, so here's chapter 8!

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Caeda(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Henry(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

During the early hours of the morning, Marth was up. He finished taking a shower as he looked at himself in the mirror. Feeling more pleased with his decision yesterday; he'd kneel down and grab Elice's blow-dryer and brush from the cabinet. Plugging it in, the bluenet grabbed a piece of his hair, placing it onto the brush. Turning on the button, he began to blow dry his hair. After ten minutes, he'd take out his contacts. Taking a deep breath, the boy looked at himself in the mirror.

"*Alright Marth, you can do this. The guy at the mall showed you how yesterday so it shouldn't be that hard."* Placing the contact on his right finger, Marth grabbed the solution with his left hand. He'd put a bit on the contact to keep it moist as he attempted to put it on for the first time. It took him a couple of tries, but he managed to get it in. Afterwards, he'd attempt to get the second one in.

A few minutes later, Marth continued to stare into the mirror blinking. Tilting his head, the naïve boy stared off into the distance.

"*Is this really me?"* he thought to himself. *"I look weird without my glasses, but I guess that'll take some time to get used to. Just wait till my friends see me!"*

He grinned at the thought. Marth knew his friends were going to be amazed, heck, they'd probably be jealous too. Looking at himself, he'd open up the top drawer in the bathroom, grabbing his sister's tweezers. Leaning in close to the mirror, he began to pluck his eyebrows. The blue haired boy took his time, trying to be precise when it came to his second brow. Eventually he finished, putting the tweezers back where Elice had them.

Marth looked amazed once again. His features began looking more feminine, almost like a porcelain doll. Thinking to himself, he almost looked like Prince Marth spot on, but there was one thing Marth didn't have that the prince did; a better body. Sighing to himself, he'd grab his lower stomach.

"Starting today, you're going on a diet mister." Marth would leave the bathroom and head back to his bedroom to get dressed. He'd put on his uniform, grab his bag and go downstairs. Looking at the time, he figured that he could be generous and make his sister breakfast. After all, she always did it for him when she's up, so why not return the favor.

Opening the cabinet, Marth would grab the pancake mix. Reading the back of the box, he'd open the fridge, taking out the milk, eggs and butter. He'd bend down, opening the bottom cabinet, grabbing a bowl and whisk, placing it on top of the counter.

Marth poured the mix into the bowl and added the eggs in afterwards. Next, he'd warm up the butter in the cup before putting it into the bowl. After that, the adolescent poured the milk in and began to whisk the batter until everything was mixed in. When he finished, he'd turn on the stove and grab a flat pan. Rubbing butter onto the pan, he placed it, waiting for it to heat up.

A minute later and Marth would begin making pancakes. Footsteps could be heard as Elice happened to be awake. The bluenette would make her way into the kitchen, looking around.

"What's going on?" she muttered. Elice was still sleepy, but noticed her younger brother flipping pancakes. Rubbing her eyes, a faint smile formed on her face. Grabbing a chair, she'd scoot it towards the counter and plop down. Marth placed the finished pancakes on the plate, handing it to her along with butter and syrup.

"Morning sis." He greeted. Elice grabbed the butter along with the knife. Spreading it on her pancakes, she'd grab the syrup and put it on top. The young adult began cutting it afterwards, taking a bite.

"This came out very good Marth. Thank you for making breakfast by the way, it was very sweet of you to do so."

"Hehe, no problem. It was nothing really. I just figured if you were still sleeping so why not make breakfast for once, ya know?" Elice squinted, staring at Marth. She noticed something very different about him. Pausing for a moment, she tried to find the right words to say before she spoke.

"Marth?"

He perked up. "Yeah?"

"Did you use my tweezers by any chance?" piped up Elice. She continued staring at him, knowing that his eyebrows were plucked.

"Uh… yes. I just wanted to try something different, you know? My regular eyebrows didn't go with his haircut so I figured that I'd-. "Marth was cut off by laughter before he could finish. He'd stare at his sister, wondering why she laughed so hard.

"I'm sorry," she said, catching her breath. "You just look strange at the moment. It'll take some time getting used to. I'm just not used to you looking like that is all." Marth would look down, hiding his face from his sister. Noticing his body language right away, Elice got up from the chair and approached him.

"I didn't mean it in a rude way. I'm sorry Marth." She'd hug him. "If it'll make you feel better, how about we go out for ice cream after school? You can bring a friend along if you'd like."

The boy would look up, nodding. "You really don't have to Elice, I just overreacted is all. Like you've said earlier, you're not used to this and I guess I'm not used to it either." He'd look at the clock and jumped.

"Speaking of which, I should start heading out if I want to get there early. I'll take you up on your offer later." He'd run out of the kitchen, into the living room and approached the door. He'd yell bye to his sister before leaving.

Marth would begin walking, wondering how today was going to go. *"It should be an easy day today since its Club Day."* He sighed. *"That means today's the day that I attend the first kendo meeting. I hope I don't screw up."*

Hearing the sound of a car, the boy winced. Looking back, he'd notice Douglas' car as the football player sped through the neighbor. The driver would pass him, going on with his day. Blinking, Marth would look around not believing what just happened.

"They didn't recognize me at all…" he thought out loud. Grinning, Marth would make his way towards the school. Looking both ways before crossing the street, he'd notice Caeda and wave. The bluenette blinked, wondering who that was before she got closer.

"Marth…? Is that you?" Blinking, she'd walk closer, observing his facial features before greeting him.

"It is you! Wow, you look so… different." Her face flushed a little. Marth beamed in response.

"I just got a haircut yesterday as I've figured I should try something new. The same thing goes for the contacts as well." Caeda nodded in response, smiling.

"I think you look really great! Just wait till the others see you. C'mon!" Caeda would begin to drag Marth, holding his hand. Both of them lightly blushed as they headed to the school grounds. The boy felt a warm fuzzy feeling inside of him. He hoped that this moment would never end as he enjoyed every bit of it.

As the two reached the grounds of Burazazu High, Marth saw a familiar figure from far away and grimaced. The two would break off holding hands as he pushed Caeda behind a tree. Marth would jump to the side as well, hiding.

"Marth!" Caeda angrily pouted, giving him a look. "What was that for?!"

"I don't want him to see me." groaned Marth. He'd point to a kid sitting on a bench. Caeda would get up and looked in the direction Marth was pointing.

Henry sat on the bench, reading what seemed to be a foreign book. A bunch of crows surrounded him, some of them sitting on top of his head, others perched onto his shoulders. That trademark smile of his was plastered on his face as he turned the pages. More crows gathered near him. Henry perked up, placing a bookmark inside as he lifted his hands up. A crow would land on his hand, looking at him with its black eyes.

Caeda would look back to Marth, whispering. "Who is that?"

"You don't want to know. He's… let's just say he's special." Marth would continue to watch the silver haired boy. His face looked rather puzzle at the scene he just saw.

"Hello there," greeted Henry, talking to the crow who sat on his hand. "What brings you here?" The crow just looked at him, not saying anything as he laughed.

"I see. Are you here to tell me that I'm being watched?!" he asked. The two blue haired teenagers behind the tree felt their heart jump. Marth's heart started racing fast, hoping he didn't get up to look for them. He'd look away from Henry, going more behind the tree as he tried his best not to make a sound.

The pale boy would get up, some of the birds flying off him before landing back on him. He'd use his open hand to put his book back in his bag before looking back to the crow.

"Aw," he whined. "Are you telling me it's not worth it to play hide-and-seek with them? I would of have fun, especially seeing the look on their faces when I find them. Oh well, I guess this is my cue to go-go!" Henry lifted his arm higher, letting the crow fly off before entering the school.

Marth sighed in relief, looking at Caeda.

"So, what's wrong with him anyways? He just seemed like any other person to me." informed the bluenette.

The blue hair boy sighed. "He's just strange. Something about him gives me a really bad vibe. I just wonder why the football players don't go after him instead, seriously." A hint of jealously could be heard in Marth's voice when he said that.

"Marth!" scolded Caeda. "That's not a very nice thing to say. You just can't go judging a person before you get to know them. Geez, you're starting to remind me of the football players themselves!"

"But Roy told me-!"

"Roy should know better as well! You two need to learn how to not be so judgmental sometimes." She'd storm off, quite irritated with Marth. He watched her, heavily sighing as he went to go inside. *"If only she knew."*

Pit and Roy were engaged in a conversation, talking about the latest computer game. Marth approached them, standing there as he waited for them to notice. Roy looked over, blinking for a second. He'd poke Pit as well, telling him to look.

"Marth, is that you?" asked the angel. The bluenet nodded in response, grinning. Meanwhile, Roy looked shock, touching Marth's face and pulling his cheeks to see if it was really true.

"Whoa, you look so different!" exclaimed the redhead. Continuing to touch him, he added "Okay, who are you and what have you done with Marth?!"

"I'm right here!" he insisted. "You can stop touching me now while at it."

"Oh, sorry." Roy would let go, looking at Marth's new appearance alongside Pit. The angel broke the silence, changing the conversation.

"Hey Marth, did you get a haircut yesterday because I really like it."

"Mmhmm," agreed Roy. Marth would blush from their flattery, hiding his face behind his book bag.

"Guys, it's just a haircut, nothing special. I'm still the same ol' Marth right?" The two nodded in unison. The bell would ring, indicating that school was now in session. The boys had about five minutes to get to class before they were considered tardy. Marth would part ways with them, heading for his History class. When he got inside, he took his seat and placed his book bag on the side.

The bluenet read the whiteboard as it told the students to grab a textbook as they came into class. Getting up, Marth headed towards the side of the classroom, grabbed a textbook and went back to his desk. Being curious about the material they were going to learn this year, he decided to take a sneak peek. He opened up the textbook, flipping through the pages. It consisted from the history of the Mushroom Kingdom to even the stories about the three goddesses. However, the topic that caught his attention was about Prince Marth of Altea. He grinned, hoping that they would learn

about his ancestor in class this year.

As he continued looking through the textbook, the minute bell played. The swarms of students running to class could be heard, some of them barging into this room. After the minute was over, Snake entered the classroom. He'd begin writing on the whiteboard, looking over a piece of paper while he transferred the question on it. After that, he'd hand over the attendance sheet to the first row and tell them to sign it and pass it around the classroom.

Clearing his throat, he'd point to the board. "Good morning class. I'm sure you all had a very easy day yesterday considering it was the first day of school. Now, I'm going to warn you about something right now. As the year goes on, this class is only going to get harder, so I suggest you really pay attention. After all, you're advanced placement students. If you feel that the workload is going to be too much, I suggest switching out to the regular class now before it's too late."

Marth would be conveyed in his own thoughts once again. *"Okay, this class shouldn't be too bad. As long as I study, take notes and focus, it should be an easy A."* The blue haired boy happened to be very gifted when it came to academics. It was one of the many reasons he got bullied but Marth didn't care. After all, the only thing he thought of was that he'd be successful while the bullies would be begging him for jobs.

The teacher stepped out of the way, pointing to the whiteboard. "Okay class, here is your first bell work of the semester. I'll give you ten minutes to answer it. Afterwards, we'll be discussing some of the answers you came up with in class." Snake would sit back down at his desk, looking into his computer. Marth looked up the board, reading the question that was proposed.

"Why is history important, hmm…?" Marth would take out a piece of paper, writing his name, date, class and class period on the side. Then he'd move down, writing the bell work question before answering it. It took him a moment to think of the answer before writing it down.

After time was up, Snake would stand up from his desk. "Alright class, tell me why history is very important." The class stared at him, students being silent as the sound of sniffling can be heard. Marth would stand up, volunteering to go first.

"Well you see…" he informed. "Without recording the events that happen in history, we'll be doomed to repeat those same mistakes. History is also important because we are the past: we are the sum of events that are good, bad or even indifferent. These products guide our actions in the present. Without these traits, history will forever be doomed to repeat itself." Marth quickly sat back down, feeling nervous about what the history teacher would think of his response.

Snake paused a little, thinking about Marth's response. A small grin formed on his rough face as he nodded in delight. "Bingo! That's the answer I'm looking for. Say kid, what's your name anyways?"

"M-Marth!" he piped out.

"Well class, Marth here just gave us a very good example on why history's very important. Without it, we'll be doomed to repeat our ancestor's mistakes." Snake would open up the textbook, looking at the first unit. "Now class, here's the next assignment. I want you and a partner to read pages thirty-two up to fifty-six. When you guys get finished, I want you to answer questions one through five. Remember to take notes as you're reading as this information will appear in the unit one test!"

Marth looked around for a partner. He noticed right away Kirby and Luigi decided to work together. Before he got up to move, he heard the sounds of a desk moving next to his.

"Hey!" Looking up at the voice, he noticed a gorgeous blonde hair woman. Her sky blue eyes looked tough as she happened to have a very curvy figure. Realizing right away it was Samus, Marth looked surprised. He didn't know whenever to be more surprised that someone actually chose him first as a partner or because he's working with Samus herself.

She'd sit at the desk next to him, opening up her textbook to page thirty-two. The blonde girl looked at him, pointing. "Marth, right?"

"Y-yeah." He nodded, answering. The bluenet opened his textbook as well, catching up to Samus. A small smile formed upon his face as he saw that the first chapter happened to be on the Akaneian history. The two began reading right away, both of them taking notes. The book heavily went into detail about Medeus, Gharnef and of course, Prince Marth himself. As the two got half way done, Samus noticed on page forty-five, the picture of the prince. Looking back up at Marth then back to the prince, she asked the bluenet a question.

"Hey Marth, I have a question?"

Marth quickly stopped up he was doing and looked up. "Yes?"

"I happened to notice that the prince looks a lot like you, almost as if you were his clone. Is it possible that you two might possibly be related?"

Being surprised, Marth wondered how to answer her question. Thinking to himself for a minute, he'd look at the picture and inspect it. After he thought of something, he'd look back up to the blonde.

"Actually, he's my ancestor. My parental guardian told me yesterday."

Samus smiled a little, nodding. "That explains everything. It must be an honor being related to someone like him, especially since I just learned about all the struggles that he had to go through. From losing his family to being betrayed by a friend, I'd say that he sounds like a very admirable person."

The two would go back to continuing their work. After reaching the last page, they'd begin answering the questions together. As they finished up the last question, the bell rang. Students would rearrange the desks and place the books back where they got them. Samus got up, waving goodbye to Marth as she told him she'll see him in third period.

Marth got up, walking slowly out of the classroom having a smug smile on his face. He began daydreaming about Samus, wondering what it would be like if he got together with her. As he went deeper into his thoughts, he would hear the sound of Kirby's voice piercing through.

"It looks like somebody possibly might be in lover's lane!" teased the pink blob. Luigi got a good laugh from Kirby's joke as the bluenet turned beet red.

"Guys, it's not like that at all! She just asked to be my partner, that's it!" Luigi gave him a look, not buying it.

"Sure Marth. Mario said the-a same thing when it came to Peach." The two boys laughed as Marth grew even more flustered.

"Guys, stop it! You're going to give attention to the football players and I don't need to deal with right now. Speaking of which, I should be heading to class. Depending on your guys' schedule, if any of your guys' classes get second period off for Club Day, we can talk there! Otherwise, see you two at lunch." Marth stormed out of that section very quickly and headed to his AP Pre-Calc class.

Arriving, he'd take his seat and looked around. He'd noticing Link sitting down, reading. *"I forgot Link was in this class! Hey maybe since he's new, I should get to know him more, but how? Should I ask him how his first way was yesterday or what?"* As Marth rehearsed a bunch of scenarios in his head, he didn't realize that he walked towards Link and accidently landed on him as the elf jumped.

Quickly getting up, the bluenet backed away very fast. "S-sorry Link, I wasn't paying attention. I didn't mean to bump into you."

Link shrugged, writing in his notebook. *'Don't fret about it. Everyone makes mistakes after all.'* Sighing of relief, Marth would move his stuff and sat next to Link, seeing as they didn't have assigned seating yet.

"So, Link… how did your first day of school go, seeing as you are new to Burazazu High and all…" asked the blue haired teen.

'*Well, it went better than I expected. To be honest, this is my first time in a public school system seeing as I was homeschooled by my foster mother back home. When we moved near Brawlville, my foster parents figured it would be best for me and my sister to get socialize with others around our age, so they registered us to public schools.'*

"That's cool! Say, since today's period is club day, how about we hang around each other and check out the clubs together. In fact, if you're up for it we should hang out after school today. It's just me and my sister in my house at the moment and I'm sure she wouldn't mind. In fact, she would be more than willing to give you a ride home too."

Link thought of it for a moment, before replying. *'Sure, sounds good. My foster parents wouldn't mind anyways. Can't wait for after school then!'*

The two eventually stopped conversing as more students came in along with Mr. Game and Watch. The teacher looked at them, waiting for the rest to come in before making announcements. Once the last few students arrived, he'd inform the students about Club Day.

"Since you guys are having a free period today, I expect you guys to teach yourselves and do the assignments for Chapter 1.1 in your textbook. Before I release you, I want you guys to pick up the Unit 1 packet. In there should be the online website to access your textbooks online and an online math lab in case you get stuck. Other than that, you're free to go."

The class got up, taking the packet as they headed out the door and into the gymnasium. Marth figured that he would be having PE outside today, but for now only focused on trying to join Kendo club.

That concludes chapter 8. Remember, the poll is still open so if you didn't vote for four clubs yet go ahead in do so. Same goes for guest reviews too. Just look to see the options on my profile.

Now, question time(I'm wrapping up my author's note because I have to go somewhere in a few minutes)

1. What clubs should Link and Marth take a look at besides Kendo.

2. If you knew someone like Henry, would you react the same way Marth did?

3. Which of his friends should be released among the first set of students for Club Week

Remember ideas and suggestions are also appreciated(for chapters 9 and counting).

I hope you enjoyed this Chapter. Don't know when I'll have chapter 9 up though.

Chapter 9: Club Day

Hello everyone and Happy Easter!

I have a little treat for you guys, which is Chapter 9!

It's all about the clubs, so I hope you enjoy it.

Marth's shadow/reflection/alter-ego makes a comeback!

Also, for those who suggested Marth/Samus and Samus/Ike, I heavily thank you because now this can create serious drama. You just gotta love torturing your favorite characters, right?

Anyways, I hope you guys enjoy!

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Jeff(Earthbound/Mother 2)
Paula(Earthbound/Mother 2)
Lilina(Fire Emblem: Sword of Seals)
Merric(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Tails(Sonic the Hedgehog)
Adeleine(Kirby: The Crystal Shards)
Ado(Kirby's Dream Land 3)
Malon(Legend of Zelda: Ocarina of Time)
Ephraim(Fire Emblem: Scared Stones)
Olivia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Sumia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Cordelia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

A sea of club booths sat in the gymnasium nicely decorated, displaying pictures and objects that relate to each club. Marth stepped inside with Link, looking around. Wondering which one they should check out first, he glanced at the Hylian asking him where to start. Thinking of a moment, Link suggested taking a look at all the clubs. After all, looking at one club just to do nothing for the rest of the hour would be a waste of time.

On the way there, the two happened to be greeted by Roy and Wolt as they went on their own separate paths. Examining all the booths, Marth wondered which one to check out first. He already knew that he was definitely going to check out the kendo club, but he wanted to save that for last. Instead, he decided to go in alphabetical order. Looking at the list, he winced a bit as he felt frightened. As he continued looking with Link, the bluenet felt a hand on his shoulder. Quickly jumping, he turned around to see who touched him, startling the Hylian in the process.

"Hey!" Samus waved, chuckling a little at the boy's reaction.

"S-Samus!" said Marth. "Don't scare me like that. I thought you were someone else…" Catching his breath, he'd look over to the list then back at the blonde.

"Sorry, didn't mean to scare you like that. So, aren't you going to introduce me to your little friend," she asked, pointing at Link.

"Oh! His name's Link. He's new to both the school and the town so he doesn't really know anyone. We decided that we were going to look at all the clubs together in alphabetical order."

"Oh really now?" she responded. "Mind if I join you guys?"

"Sure! Be my guest." Marth swiftly turned away, his face turning red. *"Dammit Marth, you should of said no! Now you're going to have to deal with being near Samus and this is all happening too fast. She's too cool for me and I'm just an average guy. Who knows, maybe she'll get bored and talk to her friends."*

As Marth sighed of embarrassment, Samus began reading the roster. "Hmm, for clubs, we got Anime Club, Art Club, Baking Club, Comic Club, Drama Club, History Club, Kendo Club, ROTC, and Yearbook. Also some of the sports activities are advertising as well to get freshman and other students to tryout."

'*That's interesting,'* wrote the elf. Link was interested in checking out each of the clubs before deciding on which one to

join. A few clicked his interest but the Hylian felt like looking at all of them just in case.

Speaking up, Marth looked to Samus and Link. "I see. Wait… isn't Anime and Comic club the same thing?"

"Actually no," a voice said from behind. "Anime Club focuses more on Japanese cartoons, comics and culture while Comic club is primarily Western."

Marth turned around to see whose voice it was. A boy with a blonde hair bowl cut happened to be standing in front of him. He wore thick-framed glasses along with the school uniform in a very neat fashion.

"Greetings," he exclaimed. "I didn't mean to startle you guys like that; I meant to check the schedule to see where the booths were placed. Anyways, I happen to be the Comic Club president so if you're more interested, come stop by our booth." The boy walked towards the paper, his finger placed on it as he found the Comic Club booth and began heading over there.

The three exchanged glances with one another before proceeding. Marth felt another poke on his right shoulder, looking in that direction just to notice Merric. Sighing of relief, Marth waved to the greenette informing him of their small group's game plan and asked if he wanted to join in. The other boy nodded in response before tagging along.

Samus noticed him, looking at Marth. "Another friend of yours I take it?"

"Yep. His name's Merric. He's pretty shy around people he doesn't know. If you get to know him real well, he's really cool."

"Oh that's cool."

The group of four approached the first booth, being Anime Club. Two young boys sat at the booth, one bearing a red cap and the other, a blonde cowlick. The one in the cap got up, looking at the four. Something about him gave Marth a calm, yet collective feel. The bluenet knew right away that this boy is the type that can read anyone like a book.

Marth did like Japanese culture but never got into the anime and manga scene. He only looked with the other three because Link wanted to check out all the clubs. He didn't mind though, seeing that he could get to learn something about the other clubs and its possible members. As he was engulfed in his own thoughts, Marth happened to notice a yellow mouse creature sitting on one of the boy's shoulders.

Quickly rubbing his eyes, Marth noticed that he wasn't dreaming. He wondered where the creature came from and saw Samus petting it.

"Aww, is that your Pikachu? It's adorable." The mouse creature cooed, enjoying every minute of Samus' touch. The silent teen nodded before finally saying a word.

"Yes. I take it you're wondering what we exactly do in Anime Club, am I correct?" he asked. The four nodded, Marth especially curious. He recalled hearing strange stories about the things that go on there, especially from Pit.

"Hmm, how exactly do I word this…" spoke the kid. Thinking to himself for a moment, realizing that he forgot to introduce themselves, the boy apologized to the group introducing himself as Red while his partner's name is Lucas.

"Let's just say that the people who attend this club are very… interesting. Me being club president while my friend's the vice president here are the most level-headed of the bunch. In a nutshell, this club is pretty much like having a party with your friends. You watch anime, discuss and do other things like help set up the cultural festival and whatnot. We happen to meet in the library every Wednesday two-thirty to four pm."

Lucas handed them each a flier as Red talked, just in case one of them might actually be interested in joining. The four nodded, waving to the two before heading off to check out the Art Club. Red looked at Marth and stopped him for a minute.

"Excuse me, but you're Marth Lowell if I'm not mistaken," spoke the boy sternly. "Your cousin told me all about you, but I've happened to notice an appearance transformation. Knowing the look on your face, your dream is to hang with the big boys, am I right?"

The bluenet looked puzzled, wondering how he even knew that right off the bat. The two never really spoke to each other before but there was something Red knew about him that he didn't. However, the only thing he could do is nod in response to Red's question.

"I've figured. Looking from your face, I can tell that you've dealt with years of bullying whenever it be verbal or physical. You want to get popular just for the sake of having revenge or even better, getting noticed. I'm going to let you in on a little

secret right now. If I were you, I would get out as soon as I can. This plan of yours is going to backfire on you and you're going to lose all of your friends, I can see it."

Marth spoke back. "You're lying right?! Nobody can see into the future, it's impossible. I'll still have my friends… I just know it!" The bluenet begin to suspect that Red has been watching a bit too much anime to tell from reality.

"Besides, I'm still going to be me, right?"

Red just shook his head in slight disgust. He knew that Marth didn't believe him and refused to believe anything that came out of his mouth. Sighing, he let Marth go. Before the bluenet walked off, he spoke for the last time.

"Don't believe me then. Just remember that I've warned you and when it happens, don't come crawling back to me crying. This is my only warning to you, after all."

Marth shuddered, finding the sudden information very creepy. Merric would look back to him, asking him what happened back there. The bluenet told him not to worry about it as the four now looked at the Art Club booth.

The two running it happened to look like twins, both having the same, short jet black hair along with a red beret. One had their hair parted to the side while one had it split in the middle. The pair happened to both be girls as they waved over to them.

"Hello and welcome to the art club booth. I'm Ado, the president of the Art Club and my colleague here is Adeleine, the vice king him what happened back there. The bluenet told president of this club." Her partner got up from her seat, bowing down as she greeted them before taking over.

"Art Club is pretty much an in-depth art course for those who are interested in. We do all forms of art which include painting, drawing, ceramics, you name it. To add, we also do volunteer work if someone commissions our club to paint something for them or make sculptures. It may sound like a lot of work for just one club, but it's actually pretty fun." added Adeleine.

Link nodded, writing something on his notebook.

'*Are the art samples being displayed at the booth any of your guys'?'* he asked.

Both girls nodded, pointing to their art pieces. Ado would hand them fliers afterwards which contained the room Art Club was in along with the time and day they meet afterschool. Samus thanked the two girls for their time, but Ado happened to stop her.

"Hey aren't you Samus Aran?" she asked.

"Yeah." Samus looked puzzled, wondering what the art club president wanted.

"May I have your autograph? I'm a big fan of the track team and you happen to be one of my favorite runners so…"

The blonde girl nodded, smiling. She'd grab a piece of paper along with the pen, signing her name and handing it to Ado.

"Thank you very much! I'm sorry for interrupting, but there's no way I could resist getting an autograph from one of my favorite school athletes."

Samus would catch up with the group. Marth noticed how close she was to him and looked away, blushing. They'd approach the baking club next as two girls happened to be at the booth. Marth recognized the two to be Lilina and Malon. Food samples also happened to place on their booth as well as he noticed a figure hiding as they eyed the sweets.

"Hey Marth!" greeted Lilina. Roy and Wolt happened to be at the table as well, hanging around and talking to the two girls.

"Well, well, well, look who's finally caught up to us," taunted Roy.

Wolt gave him a look, ruining his fun. "We haven't even looked around Roy.…"

Pouting, the redhead whined. "Awww, you've ruined the fun Wolt." Giving off a slight grin, the light haired greenette happened to notice Samus. The two boys excused themselves as they went out of the gymnasium and into the restroom.

"Roy, did you notice anything unusual back there?" brought up the greenette.

"No, I wasn't paying much attention. Did you see something strange?"

Shaking his head, Wolt replied. "Kind of… I find it awfully suspicious that Samus is hanging around Marth. Something tells me that she's up to no good. "

"Oh really now?" Roy perked up, interested. "I'm actually surprised to hear this myself. Last time I recall, she was one of the popular kids, one of Ike's best friends alongside Soren."

"That's the thing. Ever since Marth changed his appearance physically, all the sudden she's interested in him. Something tells me that she's up to something. Probably wants to embarrass Marth in front of the whole school."

Wolt sighed. He wished he can read minds so he can see the blonde's motives. Roy glanced at him, washing his hands in the process.

"Whatever it is, we got to find out. Perhaps we should start paying attention to her more, learning every little move she's going to make."

"I'm surprised Merric hasn't noticed yet."

"I wouldn't jump too far into conclusion. From the looks of it, I can tell he's already suspicious. He just doesn't want to say anything in front of her or Link."

As the two continued their conversation in the bathroom, Marth and the other three were heading for the Comic Club booth. They've happened to recognize the blonde boy from earlier as they approached him.

Smiling, he looked up.

"I'm quite ecstatic to see that you've guys decided to drop by after all. " The boy stood by a two tail fox who handed them Comic Club fliers.

"Anyways, the name's Jeff and my friend here is Tails. " The two shook their hands, thanking them for stopping by.

"As I've told you earlier, this club focuses more on Western comics like, for an example, superheroes. This club follows a similar format to the Anime Club, but the membership is much smaller. We meet every Thursday after school from three to four-thirty pm in the library. In fact, the librarian herself told us that we're a lot quieter than the Anime Club, so if you don't like loud environments this is the club for you." informed Jeff.

Link nodded, looking at the comics being displayed on the table. Some of the comics happened to be influenced from famous heroes such as his ancestor himself. Grinning a little, Link would thank Jeff and Tails for their time before heading for the Drama Club.

As they approached the table, Samus recognized one of the people sitting at the booth happened to be Zelda's brother, Sheik. A girl would stand up, hiding her face behind the paper as she clutched onto it. She had long, light pink hair that was tied back along with the softest purple eyes anyone has ever seen. Taking a deep breath, the flustered girl lowered the paper a bit looking at Marth and company.

"H-hello and welcome to Drama Club." piped out the girl. While she paused, Sheik handed them the fliers, telling them in advanced that you must have an open schedule at all times if they wished to join. Without having to know them, Marth guessed right away that Zelda's brother was vice president while the shy girl was president of the drama club.

After a minute or two, the girl broke the silence.

"My name's Olivia and my partner here is Sheik. I'm sure you guys know that in Drama Club you perform school plays and even compete against other schools for rankings in the theatrical arts. We're always open to new members all year and stuff… so it'd be nice to see some new faces around." Olivia quickly turned away, hoping that the four would stop staring at her.

Sheik apologized for her actions. Rumor had it that Zelda's brother happened to be a man of few words, but knew when to speak at the right times.

"Sorry about that. Our club president gets shy really easily. Ironically though, she's one of the best performers in the school but she gets imitated real easily by huge crowds."

"It's fine really," said Samus. "We all get like that sometimes, so I understand where she's coming from. Thanks for your

time anyways."

The four made their way to the History club booth which happened to be ran by twins Popo and Nana. The twins greeted the gang, introducing themselves in the process. Nana handed them fliers as her brother did the talking. He'd inform them that history club goes more into depth about the famous heroes and even the famous tournament that took place in the exact same spot Brawlville is now. Popo informed them that the club is always open to new members throughout the year and even told them that they go on field trips to all kinds of places.

The four thanked the two twins for their time. Marth gulped, knowing that Kendo Club was next. Feeling extremely nervous, the bluenet excused himself as he told the three to go on ahead. He'd storm off into the restroom to wash his face.

"Marth," he told himself. "Sooner or later you're going to have to talk to him. After all, that's how you're going to get the actual club times. "Sighing to himself, Marth plopped himself onto the floor.

"Maybe you're not meant to do kendo." he added. Looking down to the ground and sighing again, he heard that voice once again.

"Hey, look up."

Listening to it, he noticed his reflection in the mirror talking to him again. He took on the same appearance as Marth, grinning. "Nice to see that you've changed your appearance Marth. Still have to lose weight though, but other than that, you're fine."

Getting up, Marth looked at himself. "Hey, that's not nice!" he groaned, giving his own reflection a look.

His reflection laughed at his reaction, rolling his eyes. "Do you have to take everything seriously Marth? And you wonder why people always see you as an easy bully target."

Sighing, Marth knew that his reflection was right. Before responding, the reflection interrupted him.

"Rumor told me that Samus is interested in you. Don't think about lying either Marth because there's one thing you always seem to forget is that I'm pretty much you." he said.

Rolling his eyes, the bluenet continued staring at the mirror. "Samus is just a friend okay, nothing more."

"Too bad, I was going to suggest getting to know her more. It's obvious that she wants to get to know you because she's interested. You know, she wants to go out with you later on."

"As in boyfriend and girlfriend?"

"Bingo!"

Jumping back, Marth clenched his fists together. "I can't do that! She's one of Ike's best friends!" he protested. "What if Ike likes her?! That'd be unfair to him."

Shaking his head, the other Marth looked at the bluenet. "Really?! When would that be unfair anyways? It's not like he paid any attention to you all those years right? Besides, its finders keepers. Whoever gets her first has her and the other, well they lose out. You can't put a name on a girl after all. Who knows, she probably doesn't even like him."

"Yeah… maybe you're right. After all if she did, they would have been going out a long time ago."

"Exactly! So don't fret about it alright. Also, I heard that Red told you things that aren't true, am I correct?"

Marth nodded in response to his reflection.

"Good. That guy seems crazy anyways. Fuck, he's even friends with Henry for crying out loud. Just keep doing what you can to achieve your dreams. "

"Right! Thanks for everything."

His reflection grinned darkly before returning back to its normal state.

Marth eventually caught up with Link and the other two who were both present at the ROTC booth. Fox and Falco wore

their uniforms along with the other students who were in the program as well. The two anthropomorphic creatures greeted them, handing them a couple of fliers.

"As you guys may already know, the ROTC stands for Reserve Officers' Training Corps. This program, otherwise called a club by some, prepares the student for the militia of their choice. Scholarships are received throughout the year for dedicated work." explained Fox.

Falco nodded, adding "We're open up to new recruitments each year. We meet up every Tuesdays and Thursdays after school. Feel free to stop by this afternoon if you're interested in learning more about the program."

In advance, the group was about to thank them but a girl with light, curly brown hair approached him. From the looks of her uniform, she happened to be in the ROTC as well.

"Don't forget your free stick-!" Before she could hand it to them, she tripped over nothing. Everyone exchanged puzzled looks as another long haired girl in uniform approached them.

"Sorry about that," she said, handing the four their free stickers. "My friend could be such a klutz sometimes."

"It's fine," replied Marth.

The girl helped her friend up as the four waved, going to check out the last booth, Yearbook.

Recognizing one of the figures, Marth hurried towards the booth grinning.

"Hey Pit, I didn't know you were the president of Yearbook!"

"Yep! My partner in crime here's a freshman named Paula. Before you ask how a freshman got vice president, let's say that she submitted her work last year and everyone thought it was fantastic so we felt she deserved something more." boasted the angel.

"I see." Marth nodded, getting a message but still wasn't clear on it.

Writing something, Link showed his notebook to the group. *'So, Yearbook is pretty much people who work on the school yearbook afterschool right?'*

"Mmhmm," answered Paula. "Like Drama Club, you're required to attend Yearbook everyday especially since its hard work just gathering pictures and words for the book itself."

"Yep! Yearbook has its benefits though. We get to be excused from class all the time to get pictures of events and all that junk!" As Pit got more passionate about this subject, he began to get really hyper and loud as well. He'd swiftly shove the fliers in their faces, talking really loud and fast in the process. This got him a few stares as he laughed nervously.

"S-sorry!"

They'd exchange goodbyes as Marth took a deep breath. As they went to the sidelines to hang out, a figure happened to be tapping his feet behind them. Turning around, Samus rolled her eyes.

"Samus, where were you?! We needed you at the Track booth," complained Sonic.

Placing her hands on her hips, Samus just gave the hedgehog a look. "Can't a girl have some fun? What if I wanted to join one of the clubs once Track ended?"

Still tapping his feet, Sonic shook his head. "Well then, hurry up and say goodbye. Afterwards, head to the track booth."

Before Samus got a chance to say something back, the blue hedgehog was gone in a flash.

Sighing, she turned to the three boys apologizing. "I'll have to get going now. Sonic can be an impatient asshole sometimes." Samus waved, running to manage the track booth with Sonic.

Marth watched her go. Realizing he forgot to visit the kendo both, he told both Link and Merric to stay put. As he approached the booth, the bell rang indicating second period was over. The bluenet sighed, realizing he missed his chance to get information on the kendo club.

Heading back to the other two, he muttered something to himself.

"Maybe I'll just head to the room after school today… or just not go." Marth would catch up, wishing his friends good luck

in third period as he headed to get changed for PE.

Marth, you should seriously take Red's advice and not listen to your reflection.

Also, Red, I know your pain man. The anime club I attended in my high school was full of crazy people, but they were all fun in their own ways. I like how colorful people who attend them usually are.

Don't worry, Marth will join the Kendo Club. Depending on how I decide to divide things, Chapter 11 or 12 will most likely be the Kendo Club chapter.

Also, I already have an idea on how Marth loses his first friend from his group. This friend might cause a chain reaction and make him lose more as I have this planned out in my head.

Hopefully that gave you guys an outlook of the clubs offered, so if you haven't vote yet, check my profile and choose your answers(for guest reviewers, post them in your review if you haven't!)

Anyways, question time!

1. Who or what do you think Marth's shadow/reflection/alter-ego is?

2. If you attended Burazazu High, which club would you join?

3. Like the second question, if you were a student here who would you be friends with and why? Who would you not want to be friends with and why?

4. When should I close my poll(ie. chapter wise)

5. I have an idea for this and want to ask you guys, before attending the Kendo Club meeting, should Link look for the mysterious figure in chapter 5 and chase her down?

6. In the next chapter for PE, I have planned a partner activity. Who do you think Marth would be paired up with, seeing as Lucario chooses pairs.[Note that Ike, Sonic, Samus, Wolf and Falcon are running booths for club week, thus excused from class.]

Sorry for the buttloads for questions, I'm just curious. Remember, suggestions and ideas are always welcomed! (Also suggest more temp pairings please!)

Chapter 10: A Changed Man

Yo! I'm here with Chapter 10. And for the poll, I decided to close it seeing how it received a good amount of votes.

And the club winner is... Anime club!

Some of the options were neck and neck with each other as well. I've put up another poll to determine a later chapter(don't know when it'll happen, but its never too early to post them up).

Anyways, enjoy!

Heading into the boy's locker room, Marth met up with Roy and Wolt. The three changed into their respective gym clothes before heading outside. While heading out, the three engaged in a conversation.

"So Marth, what club are you planning to join?" asked Wolt.

"I was thinking about taking a stab at Kendo. I've been practicing it for years now and I figured I should take a step up. I can't keep sparring with Jagen all the time after all." he answered.

"Really? That's cool! I plan on joining the News Club with Roy, even though their booth wasn't up. I heard the teacher who runs it used to be some secret agent!"

"Yep. Maybe they might teach us their moves on how to get good news!" piped Roy.

Marth chuckled at Roy's statement.

"As long as you don't go spying on girls, then I guess it'll be okay. "

"Yeah, that's true."

The three made it outside the track field as Lucario had a bunch of Sandbags in a crate. A bunch of baseball bats where in another crate next to the sandbags. The three plopped themselves onto the bleachers, looking at the display the Pokémon had going.

"I wonder what we're going to be doing in PE today," questioned Roy.

"From the looks of it, we're going to be having an easy day today since half of the class is out in the gymnasium. "replied the greenette.

Nodding, Marth added to Wolt's statement. "Looks like the Hit-and-Run contest. Remembering that activity from last year, we get assigned partners, not by our choosing. Pretty much one of us hits the sandbag first while the other times us. After it stops rolling, Mr. Lucario records it and whoever gets the highest wins."

Roy moved his head up and down, letting the information slowly sink in until the last minute. The redhead's face expression dropped, giving a look of horror to his friends.

"Do… you guys know what that even means?!"

"No?" the other two said in unison.

"That means… one of us gets stuck with Henry!" Wolt and Marth exchanged looks, both shuddering at the same time.

"I hope it's not me…" groaned the bluenet. "I already have to work with him in my next class. Speaking of him, did I tell you that Caeda got mad at me this morning because she didn't believe me that he's creepy?"

"Wow, then again I'm not surprised. Caeda's not the type of girl to judge anyone really." stated Roy.

Wolt looked around, getting paranoid. "G-guys, can we please change the subject! I'm afraid that he'll randomly show up and hear us talking about him."

Nodding, Roy changed the subject. "I meant to bring this up earlier during second period, but anyways, my birthday party's this Saturday. Marth, I want to know if you'd like to come over my house and hang out with the rest of our gang."

Thinking for a minute, Marth nodded. "Sure! I'd love to Roy."

"Great! I won't be giving the invitations until lunch time though."

Surely enough someone happened to be behind the three as they discussed their plans.

"Bwah! Are you losers discussing your lame-o birthday party?" Turning around, the three saw Bowser behind them. The giant turtle rolled his eyes, shaking his head. Getting bored really fast, he'd decide to ditch class.

"Later losers!" taunted the football player.

The three watched the giant lizard creature walk off, looking back at each other, shrugging.

"Meh, that means all the football players aren't in class today. No biggie."

The three felt at ease for a moment until Henry showed up.

The silver haired boy happened to be humming a song while holding what looked like a doctor's note. Noticing the trio, he decided to approach them, waving. Marth turned to Roy, mouthing 'Oh god' as the pale boy came closer.

"Hi diddly-ho neighborinos! Sup?" Henry sat next to them, grinning. Marth didn't know whose grin was scarier; his or Wario's wicked smile. Having no other choice, the bluenet and the others had to be very friendly to him. After all, scary people do the strangest things.

"Nothing much actually, just enjoying the weather," exclaimed the bluenet. Roy and Wolt nodded in response with Marth as well, their gaze focused on Henry.

"That's cool. I passed out last class so I spent the entire time dreaming that I laid on a bed full of corpses. It was AWESOME!" The creep laughed at his own statement, finding it to be one of the greatest things ever imagined.

Wolt tried so hard not to laugh. Exchanging looks with Roy, the three wondered what the actual fuck Henry just said. Forcing themselves to put on a small grin, the three nodded while Roy finally spoke up.

"That's… interesting. To me, that sounds more like a nightmare than an actual dream though…." Roy responded. Laughing at his response, the silver haired boy shrugged.

"Hey, do you guys want to see… something hex-cellent?"he asked, laughing at his terrible pun once again. Trying their best not to look creeped out, the present boys nodded. Henry would grab his hand, squeezing it as it started to form all kinds of nasty colors.

"Oooo, look at the colors! Aren't they pretty?"

Marth looked away, losing it. "GAUGH, STOP IT! THAT'S FUCKING GROSS!"

Cackling at Marth's response, Henry let go of his hand, letting the color return on his ghost white skin. The bluenet felt bad that he had to yell at him like that but then again, Henry kind of deserved it. After all, he had to put up with him and his terrible puns in fourth period.

"Alright, you're the boss Marth-a, nya ha ha!"

The bluenet's face dropped. Roy and Wolt looked at each other in shock from what just came out of Henry's mouth.

"Did you just call me… Martha?" Making a face, Marth angrily pouted trying not to strangle this kid. Out of every nickname he's gotten over the course of his life, he despised Martha the most. After all, it reminded him of all the jokes kids used to make during his early years.

Instead of taking it back, Henry just went on. "Mmhmm, isn't it great?! In fact, I can think up a whole list of names for all three of you! Teehee!"

"Uh no, please don't go there," said Roy. Noticing the silver haired boy's face dropping, Roy quickly had to change it before they'll get cursed. "Instead, just save all your great material! We wouldn't want you to run out of jokes now, would we?"

"Aww, yeah that's true. " Henry moaned before returning to his usual happy expression. Marth begin to wonder if this kid ever displayed more than one emotion to begin with.

More students appeared in the PE class, some new faces as they switched their class schedule around. The teacher arrived as well, taking out his roster as he began doing roll call. As Lucario finished, Henry got up, handing him the

doctor's note. Reading it and nodding, Lucario made note of the boy's medical conditions. He'd move in front of the small group of students, clearing his throat.

"Today class, it's going to be an easy day. Most of you aren't here because they're out running club day booths." Spoke the Pokémon. "For today's agenda, we're going to begin doing warm ups, doing two laps around the track and then I'll pair you guys up off into groups of two. After that, we'll be doing the Hit-And-Run contest. If there's remaining time afterwards, I'll dismiss you guys early."

Getting off the bleachers, the class lined up and spread out, doing stretches for ten minutes before running two laps around the track. Henry, on the other hand, was excused from having to do both laps, so he was only required to do one.

After twenty five minutes, the class met back with Lucario. He held a box full of stop watches, making them float next to him as he began to partner off the students. Marth began getting anxious, wondering who he'll be force to partner up with as the already paired students grabbed a bat along with a stopwatch. As the list became narrower, he crossed his fingers hoping that he wouldn't get stuck with Henry.

"Pherae and Sullivan!"

Roy winced, trying his best not to groan as he ended up being the unlucky one. The two would grab the equipment and head over to the field as the silveret began making baseball puns.

"Finally, Lowell and Renais."

Looking over to see who he was paired with, he noticed a girl with light blue-tealish hair. She had it tied into a pony tail for PE. It took him a moment but Marth recognized her to be Ephraim's twin sister. The two gathered their things, heading to the patch of grass where the other pairs stood.

Marth glanced at her, feeling awkward. *"Is it me or am I getting stuck with the popular kids today?"* Sighing, Marth waited his turn, watching the first pairs swing their hardest as the sandbags began flying. Lucario recorded the times the second pair gave out as he wrote the distances from each person.

As Marth's time came closer, Eirika decided she was going to go first as she handed him the stop watch. Positioning herself, the girl swung very quickly, knocking it into the sky. Marth began timing, his eyes observing the sandbag as it jumped on the ground, skiing its way on the dirt. After a minute, it finally came to a stop as he told the PE teacher her time.

Next was his turn. Marth waited for the other pairs to go before finally getting a chance. Eirika handed him the bat, exchanging it for the stopwatch. The bluenet sighed, approaching the sandbag, getting ready to swing.

"Okay Marth, you can do this. The faster you do this, the faster we can change and get out of class early." he thought to himself out loud. Taking a swing, Marth hit the sandbag watching it fly really far. Blinking, the boy stepped back, being surprised himself as well as the other students.

After a few good minutes, it landed as Eirika recorded the time. Lucario would thank the students for their hard work and released them early. They'd place the objects back in their proper crates and headed back to the locker rooms to change back.

Sighing of relief, Marth was glad that PE ended fast. As he got closer to the locker rooms, someone tried to get his attention.

"Hey you!"

Turning around, Marth saw Eirika as both of their blue eyes met face to face. A small grin was on her face as she congratulated him on his work.

"Out of all people, I never knew you really had it in you Lowell. To be honest, I was really impressed back there."

Taken aback by her comment, Marth shook his head. "It wasn't anything special. I just got lucky, that's all."

Not buying his excuse, Eirika looked at him. "I can tell that you've been practicing your swinging. In fact, your hands show it." Grabbing his hands, she pointed out all the faded out wear and tears that Marth received when he practiced Kendo and other sports activities."

Pausing, she added "I can tell you have a sword hand. Perhaps you can come to the kendo meeting after school? I'd be looking forward to sparring with you, that's if you go."

The girl left, letting her words sink into Marth's cranium. He stared off into space before going to get changed. Heading into the boys locker room, he'd switch back into his uniform and head outside just to find Wario and Waluigi looking for him.

"*Great…."* Panicking, Marth tried his best to pass them but his plan failed. The two instantly knew his scent right off the bat and surrounded him.

"Well, well, well, look what we have here brother?!" exclaimed Wario, looking extremely excited. The two moved closer towards the bluenet, completely cornering him.

"Looks like we get to have our fun again Wario, but this time, let me get a turn first," boasted the skinny one. As Waluigi went for the first punch, Marth decided that he was no longer going to put up with their antics.

Rapidly moving to the side, Marth threw a punch at Waluigi, hitting his nose. Looking appalled, Wario went to his brother wondering if he was alright. Grunting, Waluigi glared and aimed for Marth again just to have the bluenet step to the side. As Wario moved quickly to pin Marth down, the boy kneed him in the stomach, causing the obese man to fall down.

Giving them a glare, Marth took a fighting stance and boasted "There's much more where that came from. I'm sick of having to deal with your guys' bullshit day after day." Grinning, he'd place his foot on Wario's back.

"Let this be a warning. Fuck with me again and you two will receive more than just this punishment. I'm not the same Marth you used to know, I'm a changed man."

The bluenet removed his foot, walking away as both of the brother's jaws dropped. Marth didn't know that some people witnessed his actions as it started to go around the school.

Heading towards the cafeteria, Marth met up with his friends. He'd place his belongings on his usual table and head into the lunch line. Marth felt a huge boost of self-confidence after he stuck up for himself against the Wario brothers. Students looked at the azure haired boy and whispered to one another. Tilting his head, Marth paid no heed to it as he decided to get a garden salad along with yogurt for lunch today.

While standing in the middle of the lunch line, Link happened to already have his meal. He'd manage to make his way towards the table, placing his food on it. Realizing that he forgot utensils, the elf got back up to pick some up. On the way, Groose and his posse stepped in front of him.

The redhead stuck his hand out, preventing Link from going on any further.

"And where do you think you're going?!" he asked. Looking at him, Link tried to go the other way just for Cawlin and Strich block him.

Groose jabbed his finger on Link's chest, poking him as he spoke. "I'm here to deliver a little warning to you. If I see you near Zelda again, I will wail on you got it? Good."

As the three boys left, Link just blinked wondering what just happened. Shrugging it off, the Hylian picked up the needed utensils and went to join his friends.

Marth arrived at the table, greeting everyone as he sat between Link and Merric. As Roy saw that the whole gang was here, he'd grab what looked like invitations out of his backpack.

"So guys, this upcoming Saturday's my birthday party. I want you all to be there and have fun. It starts at three but feel free to come earlier if you wish." He'd hand out the invitations to everyone in the table.

Opening it, Marth grinned looking at the short one. "I can't wait Roy! This is going to be great!"

"You know it is. In fact, you guys just being there makes it even better!" chirped the red head. He started humming to himself as he went to continue his side conversation with Wolt.

"So Link," asked Marth. "What club are you thinking about joining? For me, I want to join the Kendo club."

Smiling, Link responded *'Me too! I've been sparring since I was little and I figured it'd be nice to practice with others!'*

"Great! How about we both go in together?"

The two boys nodded in agreement as they finished their lunch. Getting up, Caeda suggested for the group to hang outside since the weather was lovely today. The bluenette led them under a tree as the group plopped themselves down. She'd sit next to Marth, even managing to scoot closer, leaning on his shoulder.

Marth looked, blushing as he watched the other students converse in the courtyard. He figured that he should let Link get to know the others more as well so he left the elf alone.

"Isn't this beautiful Marth?" asked Caeda. She looked to him with loving eyes, giving a cute look.

"Yeah. If it's still nice out, we should have a picnic out here tomorrow." He suggested.

"That'll be nice. In fact, let's do it tomorrow!" Continuing to lean on his shoulder, Caeda didn't notice that the bluenet laid on her as well. The two drifted off into their own daydreams, looking like two lost kittens in love.

As the group enjoyed themselves under the three, the Anime junkies happened to be outside as well. Ricken happened to petting a group of mourning doves as Red drew in his sketchbook. Henry approached his short friend, looking at the birds.

"Aww, they're so cute. I wonder what would happen if I decide feed them some dry rice I have in my backpack."

"Uh," before Ricken could answer, Lissa slapped Henry.

"Henry! Don't say such terrible things like that seriously." Pouting, the blonde went back to Lucas and Mist, apologizing for leaving their conversation so soon.

Sighing, Henry decided to chase after the birds causing a faint smile to appear on the Pokémon trainer's face.

As Marth and Caeda begin to drift off into a deep slumber, the bell rang indicating that lunch was over. The group parted ways, Marth sighing as he now had to personally deal with Henry in Anatomy class. The bluenet entered the classroom, sitting in his assigned seat as he was joined by Henry.

"Hey Martha, what's cooking? You making any more of your daily living magazines?" laughed the silveret.

Sighing, Marth forced himself to laugh. "No, I'm just thinking about something."

"Let me guess, you like a girl am I correct?"

Looking surprised, he perked up. "How did you know?"

"It's easy. I couldn't help but notice how Samus keep giving you the look. If you want, I can help you get rid of the competition."

"And you'd do that how?"

Grinning, he exclaimed "I can skin them alive! There will be tons of blood in the process, but it'll be so worth it! Or, I can curse them into never ever getting dates but I like the first option better, nya ha!"

Looking freaked out, Marth barked back. "Henry, don't do things like that! You really should think about what you're going to say before you actually say it."

As he said that, Marth noticed the other students who were already inside the class staring at them. Feeling embarrassed, he placed his head on the desk and covered his face. Henry just looked and shrugged, taking out a book and started reading it.

Olimar stepped into the classroom, getting on his step stool to lower the pull down curtain. The science teacher logged onto the computer, setting up the presentation notes for the first unit. Afterwards, he'd display it on the electronic overhead on top of the ceiling to get the students' attention.

"Ahem! May I have your attention please! We'll be starting our chapter one lecture today. I'd advise you either take notes or heavily pay attention. If you are absent, don't worry if you miss the lecture because the slideshow is also on my teacher's page."

Beginning the slideshow, Marth took notes over the introduction chapter. After the lecture ended, Olimar let class out early as well. Having no one to hang onto, Henry decided to follow Marth around. Sighing, the bluenet had no other choice but to let him do so.

"Henry, I really want to know something?" he asked.

"And that is?"

"Why are you so interested in me?"

Taking a moment to think, Henry never really thought about the answer. "I just want to be your friend is all. Deep down, you're like me, another broken soul. You'll try anywhere to fit in, even with the ones you love, you still feel empty. Part of you wants to accept the beauty that is death while the other part wants to find a purpose in this world."

Being surprised by his answer, Marth never knew that Henry could be so deep. He'd laugh, shaking his head. Eventually Marth responded, completely skipping the deep parts of Henry's statement and narrowed it down as if he was avoiding something. The two continued to carry on a conversation, Henry going on about another strange anime to the bluenet. Afterwards, the boy left Marth alone, waving as he decided to go into the library.

He'd feel a hand on his shoulder as he turned around to see Douglas and DK.

"Rumor has it you kicked the Wario brothers' ass, am I right?" he asked, grinning.

"Y-yeah." Getting on his defense, Marth took another battle stance. "What of it?!"

"I'm hate to say this kid, but good work. I'm actually impressed that you're finally blossoming into a man Lowell," said DK.

"Which brings us to our proposal," concluded Douglas. "Rumor has it some strange ghost is digging up and taking corpses from the cemetery. The football team, well excluding Mario and Boyd, plans on taking a visit Saturday night to see if it's true. One thing though, you gotta watch out for old man Dampe. So, are you up for it Lowell?"

"Um, I… I…" Marth was torn. Either go to Roy's birthday party or hang out with the Football players and earn their respect. He figured that he could always get Roy a present, so he decided to accept their offer.

"I guess you don't have it in you after all," assumed the gorilla.

Speaking up, Marth looked them straight in the eye. "I accept your challenge!"

Grinning, the two boys looked at each other and high-fived.

"Meet me at the school yard by four pm sharp on Saturday then." The two boys left, leaving Marth conflicted.

Sitting in English class, Marth couldn't focus at all. He felt like he was betraying the redhead's trust but at the same time wanted more change. The bluenet realized that hanging out with the same people got boring afterwards. He wanted to be accepted by a bigger crowd, plus this would be his chance to get into the sweet realm that is popularity. The teenager spent all period fantasizing about hanging out with the cool kids, dating Samus and even being friends with Ike again. As the bell rang, he rushed out of the classroom to meet up with Link.

Walking out of the building to relax before heading to Kendo club, Marth and Link decided to sit on a bench. They engaged into a conversation talking about how their day went and what they're expecting when they enter the club room. Link's ears twitched, the elf hearing something. Getting up, Link told Marth to stay put as he left his stuff.

"Link! Where are you going?!" Being concerned, Marth got up anyways, just to be stopped by the Hylian himself.

'*Don't worry about me, okay? I'll make it back in time for Kendo club.*' With those words, the blonde disappeared. Link began scoping the schoolyards, looking for something or someone who didn't belong here. Seeing the girl from Dairanto All Girls Academy, Link decided to study her features. She looked to be petite girl with flawless skin. She also happened to wear a huge hat, hiding her hair and face. As his eyes met with the mysterious girl from the private school, he made a mad dash for her.

The girl noticing this begins to run as well, leaving the school gates and making a right. Link wasn't going to let her get away that easily, following her every turn. The schoolgirl did everything in her power to throw Link off; from knocking down fruit stands to even jumping over a fence. Eventually she lost him, climbing up the stairs in an alleyway to hide inside an abandon building.

However, the stairs happened to be flimsy, breaking as the figure was at the half way point. Screaming, she let go of the railing by accident, falling faster. Her hat flew off, revealing long sapphire hair along with eyes the same color.

"*Is this… the end?"*

Closing her eyes and accepting her fate, the girl let herself fall until she hit something. Opening her eyes, she saw Link holding her.

The Hylian gently placed the girl on her feet, handing the girl her hat back.

Taking it, the girl thanked him. Looking at the time, she stormed off, waving goodbye to the elf before parting ways.

Noticing she dropped something, Link wished he could get her attention but it was too late. The girl was already gone. Inspecting the object she dropped, it happened to be a golden locket. Being curious, Link opened it, seeing a photo along with a name.

It happened to have a name engraved inside as well. Reading it, Link closed the locket and placed it inside his pocket for now. Getting his answer, the mysterious girl happened to be named Lucina.

That's the end of that one. From the looks of it, Marth's change is starting to slowly affect his overall character as well.

I decided to post a little treat for those who haven't seen this video yet. When I counted the results and learned that Anime Club, I couldn't help but remember this video. I'm going to post the link in parentheses in those who are interested in checking it out.

(watch?v=Utnb5Mru_zo)

Anyways, for Chapter 11, I'm going to be writing about the Anime Club first before the Kendo club. Realizing this at last minute, if I were to do it the other way around, the transition would end up very weird, especially since Link's going to hang out with Marth after.

PS. We get to finally meet Marth's cousins in Chapter 12!

So, for the next poll, you have up to four options to vote for once again. You guys know the drill on voting. Anyways, the question at hand.

- Which character should we learn about next in a later chapter?[you learn about their family, love life/interests, friends, those things]
- Zelda
- Roy
- Pit
- Henry
- Samus
- Ike
- Luigi
- Lucina

Question time!

1. Who do you think will be the last one to leave Marth?
2. What do you think Henry means by his deep statement to Marth?
3. There was a photo that Link looked at inside the locket. Any possible ideas of who was in the photo?
4. I have plans for another new student soon. Which chapter do you think they should make their first appearance in?

Fun Questions(these don't have to be answered)
*** What do you think Marth's friends(could be any) do after school?**
*** What kind of place/enviroment do you think Henry lives in? Who does he live with?**
*** What kind of people do you think Marth's cousins are?**

Anyways, that's it. Tune in next time for Anime Club!

Chapter 11: Anime Club

I am back with the winning club's chapter!

I did notice things I forgot to address in chapter 10, so let me do that right now. As on how I got Henry's last name, I looked up a bunch of surnames meaning 'dark', plus Walter Sullivan from SH4 came to mind too so yeah.

I actually had a lot of fun writing this as some of my friends even helped me. It felt nice writing a leisure chapter, especially since I was in my high school anime club last year!

Anyways, if you haven't already and you still want to do this, you can still answer the questions from Chapter 10 along with the fun ones!

Now, enter the anime club

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Otacon(Metal Gear Solid)
Miriel(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Henry(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Ricken(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Lissa(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Maribelle(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Illia(Legend of Zelda: Twilight Princess)
Innes(Fire Emblem: Sacred Stones)

All of the clubs happened to have meetings after school today for their introduction day. It wasn't a big deal seeing that next week they'll begin meeting on their actual times and dates, which gives students the opportunity to join more than one. As 2:30 came close, the students staying after school headed back inside and scurried to their club of choice. One of these clubs happened to be meeting in the library.

Seeing the students come inside, the redheaded librarian placed her head on the desk.

"Ugh, another year watching the antics of the Anime Club. I need to stock up on some more painkillers." She sighed, sitting back up on her chair as she took out a notebook. "Oh well, at least I can continue my research now."

Another authoritative figure entered the library, heading towards the librarian herself. Holding a cup of java in his hands, he leaned on the desk, smiling.

"Hello Miriel, we meet once again." The man fixed his glasses, looking at her red frames.

Sighing, the librarian looked up to him. "Hal, don't you have a club you have to manage, or try to?"

Miriel knew that controlling the anime club can be very difficult, even if the sponsor himself gets really into it as well.

Snake went into the library to pick up a couple of books before heading out. Seeing the two, him and Hal met eyes as the teacher shook his head and sigh.

"Snake! Don't give me that look," exclaimed the dark brunette. The old man looked and shook his head.

"Otacon, not now." Snake stormed out of the library quickly as Hal almost went after him. Shaking her head, Miriel sighed.

"And the saga continues…" she said, muttering to herself. Looking up, she called to Hal.

"Don't you have students to watch?"

"Oh, right! Thanks a lot Miriel!" Hal grabbed his belongings and headed over to the farther end of the library where some of the interested students sat quietly.

Red stepped inside the library with Lucas. The two boys approached the farther end of the room as well, taking a seat. The brunette took out a couple of papers out of his backpack, organizing it as he handed it to their sponsor.

The librarian observed from afar, writing details in her notebook. Miriel knew that Red and Lucas happened to be the sanest of the anime group. Red was a man of few words while Lucas happened to be extremely shy. Knowing that the worst of the bunch will be coming soon, Miriel stood up, continuing her job sorting out new books.

Storming into the door, Henry and Ricken entered and made their way to the far end. Miriel looked at them, noticing two crows perched on the silveret's shoulders.

"Ugh, this is asinine!" she said in an annoyed tone. Getting up, she'll call to the two boys, getting ready to deal with the antics that was Henry once more.

"You know you can't bring animals into the library. Release them out this instant," spoke the librarian sternly.

"Aww, okay! I can just kill them right here then, mmhmm!" Lifting up his hand, a swarm of dark energy began emerging from the boy's palm. Miriel quickly slapped his hand before anything brutal happened inside the building.

"I don't want last year's incident to happen again!"

Cringing, Miriel remembered it like it was yesterday. Henry happened to bring in a bunch of crows last year just to kill them inside the library. Students had to evacuate the room in case they'd get killed in the process. After the event ended, the redhead remembered stepping inside to scattered bodies of crows along with blood and guts on the carpet. The library had to close down for almost a month to fix up the mess Henry caused. She recalled reporting this to the principal however, he was a bit crazy himself.

Henry whined, Ricken taking the crows and releasing them outside the window. Thanking him, Miriel let them both proceed on, sighing.

"Another long year indeed…" Opening her notebook, she'll add more notes on the two boys, studying their every move. Four more students came in, Miriel looking up as she glanced at them.

Lyon and Toad walked in, scurrying off to meet up with the others. Lissa came in as well engaging in a conversation with a platinum blonde girl. Noticing this, Miriel looked at the girl's uniform realizing that she attended the private all girls academy. Sighing, there was no use in badgering this club seeming as they didn't even listen to Hal himself.

The two girls approached the far end, heading towards the table the others sat at. Ricken felt something poke his shoulders, turning around to notice Lissa and her friend.

"Hey, you two arrived just in time." Scooting over, Lissa and her friend sat next to him. Toad looked over, remembering the girl from last year.

"Guys, she doesn't even go here!" brought up the Mushroom Kingdom dweller.

Giving him a look, the girl tapping her umbrella on Toad's head. Shaking her head, she spoke.

"Don't you know your manners Toad? Just because I don't go here doesn't mean I'm welcomed here. Besides, I have a thing for the finest shoujo this world has to offer."

Sighing, Toad knew there was no use arguing with Lissa's best friend, otherwise known as Maribelle. Red got up from his chair, getting everyone's attention as the chatter died down.

"If I may have your attention, anime club is now in session." Clearing his throat, his Pikachu sat on his shoulders looking to the others. "As we may know another year marks another journey. Our fellow seniors may have left us but today we sit with new faces. It's our goal to make new members feel welcomed and to even share them our traditions. Before I go on, for those who don't know, I'm Red the president of anime club. My pal Lucas is the vice president. Our sponsor is Mr. Emmerich, but you can call him by his first name."

Adding on, Red continued. "Now on today's agenda we're going to discuss our plans for the upcoming year starting with anime suggestions. Just shout them out as I take notes."

Taking out a pencil, Red looked to the group observing them as they went to suggest anime titles.

"How about Full Metal Alchemist Brotherhood?"

"Puella Magi Madoka Magica!"

"Ouran High School Host Club!"

"Ooh, how about Princess Princess?"

"How about we all watch Deadman Wonderland, Berserk and Elfen Lied."

Shaking his head, Red scolded "Henry no. I don't think we're even aloud to show gory anime plus not everyone even likes bloody stuff."

"Aww!"

"Anyways, continue on." Red continued writing more suggestions as he received them.

"How about Naruto?!"

Everyone just stared. Henry actually opened his eyes, giving an annoyed look.

"Really? Naruto? Can't you just watch that at your house or something? We're trying to suggest anime that ain't on TV, alright?" Returning to his usual expression, the boy laughed. Red sometimes wondered how Henry is able to always look so overly optimistic.

While the anime club raved about things, two student council members entered the library and headed towards the front desk. Ilia and Innes approached Miriel, asking if she had any construction paper. Opening her drawer and handing it to them, the two couldn't help but look at the anime club.

"I take it you're faring well miss?" asked Innes. Shaking her head, Miriel took a painkiller and grabbed her water bottle drinking the pill down.

"Does that give you your answer?"

Nodding, Ilia grabbed the construction paper and headed straight for the doors. Shaking his head, Innes cringed at some of the squealing going on.

"Damn weeaboos…"

It really was going to be a long year for Miriel once again.

Remember, there's a poll on my page to determine a future chapter I plan on doing so don't forget to vote.

I'll admit, while writing this, I kept thinking ' goddammit Henry'(sorry if this slur offends anyone)

Also you learn that Crazy Hand is the principal!

Anyways, no story questions for this chapter but my friend suggested me to do this.

I plan on having Master Hand himself make an appearance soon(if you want to know, he's the mayor of this town). I want to make him personified into a human(they wear the giant hands as costumes to respect the founders of the whole Brawl foundation themselves)

So, getting to what my friend suggested, she said that I should ask my readers for suggestions and build him based on those suggestions(meaning I take a piece from all of you!)

So, Master Hand questions!

1. Should he just be called Master Hand or should he have an actual name?

2. What should he look like as a human?

3. Should he be related to anyone in the story? Explain the relationships(you can use bullets, it doesn't have to be sentences)

4. If he is the father of someone in the story, who parent should he be?(you can say that he should be single if you want him in here)

Any other suggestions to build Master Hand? I'll really need these seeing as I want to try out what my friend said, plus it'll help give the story a better direction.

Other than that, feel free to also answer the story questions from chapter 10!

Chapter 12: I Know Where You Went Wrong

I am back with Chapter 12! I've read all your guys' responses so I'll be addressing those in the end of this chapter.

In Chapter 12, Marth finally gets to talk to Ike and we get to meet his cousins.

Also, Marth and Link do some more bonding as well.

Heads up, once we get a good glimpse of the colorful cast and close/at Marth's rise, I will be doing some timeskips, but not giant ones.

I also can't believe the word document for this without my own commentary is 59 pages!

Anyways, here's number 12!

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Ephraim(Fire Emblem: Sacred Stones)
Eirika(Fire Emblem: Sacred Stones)
Lissa(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Chrom(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
RusI(Legend of Zelda: Twilight Princess)
AryII(Legend of Zelda: Wind Waker)
Lucina(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

Marth stood in front of the school gates, waiting for Link. All of the other students were already inside, attending their club of interest. The bluenet looked at his watch, sighing. Turning around, Marth was about to head inside until he felt a hand on his shoulder. Looking to see who it was, a small grin formed as Link made it just in time.

"Thank goodness you're here! I was worried that you weren't going to come back!" Grabbing his stuff, Marth handed it to the Hylian as they went inside the school.

He'd look to the blonde with an innocent look, asking "So, where did you head off anyways? I'm curious."

Shrugging, the Hylian answered 'I just saw something that interested me, that's all. It wasn't anything big, so it's nothing to worry about.'

The two stepped inside the room where Kendo club was being held at. Taking their seats in the back, the two looked up to see Ike and Ephraim setting up their agenda. Eirika noticed Marth as she gave him a small smile before paying attention. Marth gazed at Ike, noticing more of his prominent features.

It was strange to think how such an old childhood friend can grow so handsome but it was possible. The bluenet remembered Ike's baby face like it was yesterday. Seeing him so grown up and different seemed new to him. Thinking about it, Marth was glad that he made the decision to join Kendo. Perhaps, he can rekindle his bond with Ike again.

Ike finally took the stage, clearing his throat as the group of students interested stared at him. Taking a moment to think about how to word this, something caught his eye before going on.

"Hey! I'm pretty much sure you're all here for Kendo am I right? Good, now today is going to be a pretty easy day seeing how it's only the introduction. Alright, I'm sure all of you know who I am and also who my friend up here is, if not, that's okay. As you all know, my name's Ike. I happen to be captain of the kendo club and team. My friend Ephraim here is vice-captain of kendo meaning if for some reason I can't make it, you all take orders from him."

Ephraim nodded in response, looking over the group of students. Getting out the equipment to show them what they'll need, Ike let the blue-green haired teen take over.

"As you may know, you're going to need the proper equipment to practice Kendo. Now, if you don't have your own, don't worry the school has a good amount of supplies. However, if you do have your own equipment, I advise on bringing it. Anyways," he'd grab the first set of equipment which happened to be the garb. After that, Ephraim would show off the other equipment to the students. The two boys took turns, introducing them to things such as the tournaments, time schedule and whatnot. An hour later, the introduction ended.

Being dismissed, everyone headed out the doors. Ephraim left as well with his sister, saying goodbye to Ike before heading out. The indigo haired boy noticed a vaguely familiar face as he approached Marth.

"Hey, can I speak to you alone please?" he asked the bluenet.

Seeming very surprised, Marth wasn't sure how to respond at first. Looking towards Link, he told him that he'll meet him outside the school as he told him to go on ahead. About a minute later, it was just the two bluenets in the room. Marth started getting a bit nervous, wondering where this was going to go.

Focusing on him, Ike realized that his guess was correct. "Marth… is that really you?" he asked, double checking to make sure.

"Y-yeah… you've sure changed," he responded.

"And so did you. It's been a long time since we've talked to each other. How are things going for you anyways?"

"Well," he began. "Things could be better, but I'm glad that they're not really that bad. To be honest, I've been observing you since the beginning of freshman year. I envy you Ike, really I do. You always seem so happy, so carefree and then there's me. I'm forcing myself to go to school every day, a life I never wanted in the first place."

Ike grimaced. "I'm sorry to hear that Marth… I really a-." Before he could finish, he was cut off by Marth himself.

The bluenet felt himself getting very angry. Ike knew that he was one of the junior class losers. He knew about the bullying, the name calling, everything and all the thing he did was apologize. Clenching his fists, Marth actually started yelling at him.

"That's it? That's all you can say Gaiwan, really? I'm fucking appalled to be honest. You KNEW the shit I've been going through, you KNEW that I was getting bullied and what did you do, nothing?! You never gave a shit about me at all. In fact, you were just waiting to leave me! Why did you ignore me all these years!? What kind of fucking person abandons their best friend in the fourth grade for someone else! Was I that much of a fucking embarrassment to you?! Was I the one who was holding you down all these years?!" Laughing like a maniac, he glared at the bluenet.

"I've wasted all my fucking years on you! I will become better than you! You… you'll see." Storming out, Marth ran into the bathroom and broke down.

Ike just watched him go, speechless. Sitting down on a chair, he heavily sighed as he looked down.

"I don't know what happened Mother…. I don't know what went wrong, but it seems like I've created a monster…" Continuing on, Ike added "I didn't know how to approach him anymore… it's just he started seeming so out of touch with reality ever since his parents died…"

Ike wasn't usually the type of person to show his emotions in front of others unless he really trusted them or he was alone. For the first time in years, he actually started crying.

Finally heading out of the building, before meeting up with Link the bluenet received a text message from his sister. Taking out his one and opening the message, Elice told him that his cousins were going to be taking him to meet her at the ice cream parlor. Sighing to himself, the blue haired teen jogged over towards the Hylian.

"Sorry about that. I didn't expect to get stopped like that." apologized Marth.

'*It's fine. Say, what happened back there anyways? What did Ike ask you, if you mind telling me?'* Link was curious to know. From only being at Burazazu High for two days, he already knew that Ike was one of the most popular students in the school.

Shrugging, the boy answered "It wasn't anything special. Besides, don't worry about it."

Smiling to Link, Marth took a different direction from his usual route. This confused the Hylian as he followed the bluenet to the parking lot. Realizing he forgot to inform Link, Marth turned around and stopped.

"I forgot to mention this earlier, but my sister texted me. She told me that we're going to meet her at the ice cream parlor instead of waiting on her to get to my house so my cousin's driving us there."

'*You have family that lives in Brawlville as well?'* asked the Hylian.

"Yep! In fact, one of them goes to Burazazu High as well. Both of them used to go last year, but one of them graduated last year. In fact, this year's their first year at college." chirped the bluenet.

Nodding, Link added *'That's great! Say, are they related by any chance or do they have their own parents?'*

"They're all siblings. The oldest is working on getting her masters, the second one just started college and the third is a sophomore that attends school here," answered the bluenette.

'*Cool!'*

The two sat on a bench, watching all the other students either drive off themselves or get picked up by their parents. While waiting, Marth decided to observe other people just because. Looking around, he could see the twins heading into their car and driving off from the remainder of the anime club acting crazy. Glancing away for a moment, he looked up and went into deep thoughts.

"I'm glad he remembered me, even though it felt awkward around him…. I do really hope I can rekindle my relationship with Ike but…" Looking down, Marth realized that what he wanted will never happen. From observing the body language of Samus and Ike earlier, he could tell that the indigo haired boy had feelings for her as well. Remembering what his reflection said, he shouldn't give her up so easily like that. Besides, she might just like him as a friend anyways. As Marth continued to get engrossed in his own thoughts, the sound of honking entered, interrupting them.

Heeding over to the sound, he saw a familiar car and scurried over Link following him.

"S-sorry! I didn't mean to keep you waiting."

Getting in the car, the boys noticed two girls. Marth assumed that his cousin was also bringing a friend over as the two sat in the back. The driver looked over, gazing at Link.

"Is that the friend you're bringing over Marth?" he asked.

"Mmhmm! His name's Link. Believe it or not, he just started school here yesterday."

The driver nodded. The blonde noticed that the driver had the same blue eyes and hair as Marth, but had a stronger build. His hair was styled differently as well as it looked a bit scruffy and his bands parted to the right side. Before the cousin can introduce himself to Link, honking could be heard as all the other parents waited to leave.

"Oh gods, these people are impatient…"

Getting annoyed, he would quickly leave the parking lot and drew himself on the driveway. Everyone literally held onto their seat for life as his cousin got called an idiot from an angry driver for not paying attention. He sighed angrily before forcing himself very close at a stoplight.

"Sorry about that. The name's Chrom by the way." said the driver, introducing himself to blonde. "My sister's name is Lissa who also decided she was going to bring her friend at the last minute."

Nodding, Link would be pushed back by force as Chrom stepped on the gas. Everyone once again held for their lives.

Marth winced at Link, whispering "I forgot to tell you that my cousin's not a very good driver. Thank god we're going back to my place with my sister. Her driving is flawless compared to this."

Breaking the silence, Marth asked his blue haired cousin a question to get his mind off of earlier.

"So Chrom how was your day today?"

"Not bad. I was having a really nice nap until Lissa called." Chrom sighed. His eyes will still groggy from getting up.

"You need to stop forgetting that you have to pick me up after school!" shouted Lissa. Maribelle nodded in agreement before adding her own comment.

"You just can't keep napping you know. Besides, shouldn't you start actually doing your homework? College isn't high school."

Shaking his head, the bluenet sighed. "It isn't due until next week. Say, shouldn't you be at the private all girls academy?"

As the three continued blabbering, Link noticed that the platinum blonde girl wore the same uniform as the girl he encountered earlier. He was tempted to ask Maribelle about Lucina but quickly decided against it. After all, he just met

these people and it would be weird asking about someone he just met himself.

After thirty minutes later, the gang arrived at the ice cream parlor in one piece. Getting out, Link looked to Marth and noticed he looked pale.

'*Are you okay?'* he asked.

"Y-yeah, let's just say I'm glad I'm alive…"

Marth stepped out of the car slowly making his way inside the ice cream parlor. A huge grin appeared on his face as he noticed Elice and stormed over to her. They embraced into a hug. Link couldn't help but smile at the scene as she got them a big table. The group placed their things while deciding on what to order.

"So is this your new friend Marth?" asked Elice as she smiled and waved at the Hylian.

"Yeah, his name's Link."

Turning to Link, he'd introduce him to Elice and get them acquainted. Looking over to the flavors, Marth decided he wanted a waffle cone sundae. Link on the other hand, decided he wanted a scoop of ice cream with a waffle cone.

Elice paid for both of the boys' ice cream along with a small cup of vanilla ice cream for herself. Looking over to her brother and his friend, she couldn't help but ask them questions.

"How did you two meet anyways?"

"We just happened to have a class together. After that, it turned out Pit had third period with him and he brought him over. Then from there on, we just became friends." Nodding at Marth's response, Link began eating his ice cream.

Chrom looked over to his younger cousin. "So, when are you going to start driving Marth? I've heard you just got your permit a week ago."

"Um, when I'm ready," he guessed.

"If you want, I can teach you how to drive. Hey, how about I teach you how to this weekend?"

Cringing, Marth quickly looked away and used Roy's birthday party as an excuse. "S-sorry. I have a friend's party at three! Maybe some other time?"

Out of all people, Marth didn't want to learn how to drive from Chrom. After all, he almost got them all killed many times. Link glanced at the others, surveying them. As he got to Maribelle, she gave him a dirty look as if she was saying that she was better than him. Shrugging, he looked at Marth for an answer.

"She doesn't like middle class people or how she calls them, commoners. Trust me, I've seen her for almost a good chunk of my life too," replied the bluenet, whispering into Link's ear.

Marth eventually finished his ice cream and decided to head into the bathroom to wash his hands. As he approached it, Maribelle came out of the girls' restroom, looking at him.

"Marth, are you trying something because you certainly look different from the last time I've seen you," she stated.

"I just wanted to try a new look is all," he replied back. Giving him a look of suspicion, Maribelle wasn't buying it. Marth forgot that even though she didn't attend the same school as him, she did attend the anime club here. The platinum blonde girl also happened to be friends with Red.

"A new look? Is that the best excuse you can come up with Lowell?" Sighing, Maribelle shook her head in slight annoyance. "Whatever it is you're planning to do, I would stop right ahead if I were you. It's not worth it." And with those words, she went to join Lissa.

Shrugging, Marth made his way into the bathroom and washed his hands.

"Don't listen to her either Marth. She doesn't even go to Burazazu so she doesn't know anything." He told himself. Finishing up, he grabbed a bunch of paper towels and dried his hands. After that, he'd head out and notice that everyone finished.

The two sets of families parted ways; Elice taking Marth and Link and Chrom taking the rest. The two boys went into the

back seat of the car as the bluenette started it up. Afterwards, she backed out and placed the gear into drive and drove off.

"Hey Marth, while you're still in the car I have something to tell you," exclaimed his older sister.

"And that is?" he replied.

"I'm going to be out of town this weekend with a couple of friends. I'll need you to pack a weekend's worth of clothes because you'll be staying at your cousins' place for the weekend. Jagen won't be back from his business trip for a while and I don't want you being in the house all by yourself."

"Oh, alright I guess I can get started on Thursday evening."

Elice made it to their house as she placed her car on the driveway, setting it to park while setting the emergency break up. Marth and Link got out of the car as she opened the garage and followed her inside. Link looked around their house, noticing ancient relics of the past. His eyes explored Marth's house as he even noticed portraits of a younger Marth and Elice on the wall.

The bluenette herself asked the two if they wanted some baked chicken and mashed potatoes for dinner. Both boys nodded as Marth lead Link upstairs so they can work on their homework together.

When they arrived, Marth told Link to wait a moment as he took out his laptop to check his Smashbook page. Logging on, Marth noticed a new friends request and clicked on it. Reading the name Samus Aran, he accepted it right away before opening a new tab. Opening his book bag, he took out the website Mr. Game and Watch gave them and logged onto it. Pulling up the math homework, he placed the laptop on a cooling table as he and Link began to do the questions. Thirty minutes later, both boys finished, putting the homework in their book bags for tomorrow morning.

Marth closed the tab and checked his Smashbook page once again and this time received a message from Samus herself. Reading what she asked, he answered it writing his response before closing his laptop completely. The two boys laid on the bluenet's bed, looking up at the ceiling.

"Hey Link?" asked Marth.

Link turned to him, looking.

"Did you ever have a crush on anyone?"

Nodding, the Hylian responded *'Yeah. In fact, I currently have a crush on some girl I just met yesterday. Strange I know, but there was something about her that wasn't like the other girls. She seemed more elegant, more mature you know?'*

Marth nodded, replying "Yeah, I get you. Like, you remember Samus right? I kind of have a crush on her, but I don't know how to tell her? Maybe I should get to know her first before really doing anything."

Both boys sighed as they understood each other. They talked about a variety of subjects before being called for dinner. The two hurried down the stairs, Link grabbing his book bag. Heading into the kitchen, the boys took a seat as Elice served them.

"So, Link were exactly is it that you're from?" she asked.

'*Well, I came all the way from Hyrule. This town seems pretty nice though. I live near the outskirts, so I always take the scenic route on my bike before heading over. If I'm not mistaken, my foster father dropped me off today because he had to get a few things in town,'* he replied.

"That's nice. I've never been to Hyrule before, but I've heard many great things about it. I'm also glad to hear that you're enjoying your stay in Brawlville so far," she chirped.

The three would continue on, having a nice meal before having to drop Link off.

After they finished, Elice took Link home and dropped him off. Rusl thanked her for having him over before she drove off. Heading into the house, Link went up into his room. Aryll greeted him, giving her older brother a hug before going to watch some cartoons on TV.

Entering, Link changed into his pajamas and closed the door behind him. Opening his book bag, he took out the locket that belonged to the blue haired girl. Thinking to himself, he wondered what Lucina's purpose was.

"*Why was that Lucina girl at Burazazu High out of all places? I mean, it probably gets boring being at an all girls' school, but why was she waiting out by the school gates. I didn't want to tell Marth this, but I saw her intensely staring at him as if she knows him or something. I know I'm not bound to get the answer from her, but maybe she just happens to be a Prince Marth fan or something. "He* shrugged, turning off his bedroom light. *"Who knows? Perhaps I'll see her again tomorrow or something. Maybe then I could return back her locket at least…"*

After he thought about her some more, the elf finally fell asleep.

Marth finally gets the chance to talk to Ike and he blew it. Don't worry, they'll still have mutual feelings towards each other, for now.

Another reminder of the poll. You have up to four choices to vote for and even guests can vote(just put in the review)!

Anyways, I'll be addressing the Master Hand thing first along with posting a new set of questions relating to him based on the suggestions you gave me.

One thing for sure is that he's going to be a hand along with his brother Crazy(they're both giant hands so), but I liked the idea ylisse said so he's going to have a human form as well. His actual true self is the giant hand though, so don't worry.

And for his human form appearance, I'll be using the lovely description amberprimrose gave me. :)

There's a tie(or around a tie) between single and having an adopted kid and actually having a kid, so I'm going to use the information to form more questions. Here it goes.

Now, for the questions on M.H.

1. This is still in debate and will be determined by votes(in comment form) if he did have an actual child, who would you want it to be and why? If he adopted a kid, who would you want it to be and why? Last but not least, for the single group, just go SINGLE.

2. How do you feel that he should play a role in the story?

3. Should he and Crazy Hand be twins or something

Anyways, now onto the actual Chapter questions

1. If you had the chance to talk an old childhood friend like Ike, would you react the same way Marth did?

2. Why do you think Lucina keeps observing Marth?

3. What do you think Lucina's motives are.

4. What do you think Lucina's planning to do?

EDIT: I forgot to add two more things, one of them being a question!

5. What do you really think happened to Marth and Ike?

Now, I remember earlier discussing going into dark themes that I will put possible trigger warnings for(like psychiatric hospitals, eating disorders, suicide, domestic violence, those are examples of triggering things). Now, suggest dark themes and how to apply them(for later chapters, like 30s and up maybe). Note one dark theme I won't be doing is rape since its very traumatizing, plus I don't feel comfortable actually portraying it.

That's it. Other than that, please suggest ideas and whatnot for the next chapter or any of the future chapters as well. Those and answering the questions help me get a clear idea of what I'm doing.

Thanks for reading. Tune into Chapter 13 soon!

Chapter 13: Author's Note Updated April 8

Hello everyone! Iggy here with the official first author's note of this story.

I just want to thank everyone who's ever reviewed and even read the story! That really means a lot to me, especially since I've always had alternative universe ideas like this for a long time, but I was afraid to utilize it. It makes me very happy that you guys are enjoying the chapters, characters and what not.

At first before, I originally planned to put in original characters instead of other Nintendo/Sonic/MGS characters but decided against it. Looking back, I'm glad I've made that decision because look how much characters Nintendo has, especially if you look at all the game series, like Zelda for example(like we have OoT, Twilight Princess, Oracle of Seasons/Ages, etc).

That really helped me develop such a colorful cast of students, varying based on their already set bios/data and whatnot. I try my best to enhance those features for the alternative universe and even add in my own that fit the character based on their already given traits. If I'm not familiar with a character or series, I try my best to look at the wikia pages and even watch youtube videos of them in conversation so I can them down the best I can.

As for suggestions and ideas, I really love all the ones I have received so far. Even if it seems that I haven't used it, I do go back and weave in earlier ideas from early reviews and put them in later chapters. Like one review done by SuperJimmy978 when they described some characters and traits they wanted for Chapter 3(I'm so sad that this website doesn't show them right away because I would of used it in chapter 3) really helped me get the basis of some of the characters in this story, so I thank you for that!

For those answering the story questions(those aren't mandatory, but they do help me get ideas and write faster), I really thank you as well. It helps me get a general basis of what's going to happen in the next chapter and future chapters as well as helps me develop that character more.

To be honest, it if wasn't for all those things, I probably would of given up on this story a long time ago and moved onto something new. I really thank you guys for that because I really want to see The Rise and Fall from start to finish.

I am trying my best to make the students as realistic as possible. Like, in TV usually the losers are bullied by everyone, but from my high school experiences, it was never that way. Only a few people thought you were unworthy while there were more bystanders than anything else.

For an example, Peach(I plan on having her finally show up in Chapter 13) is the head cheerleader of her squad, but she has a heart full of gold and likes everyone's presence, unless they're a bully. Thinking from an honest standpoint, if I were to put Marth and his gang in an actual school setting, they would be labeled as normal kids actually, its just that a couple of jocks happen to find him an easy target. I say that because if it was like a movie/tv show, they would of gone for someone in the Anime table instead of Marth and co. Yeah, I'm probably rambling on now, but I'm sure you guys get the message.

For this AU as well, I try my best to incorporate Smash Brothers elements such as their PE class. Heck, there's a reason why the town's called Brawlville and whatnot.

Now, addressing the Master Hand thing, I decided to leave him single. You can still answer the questions on Chapter 12, but I decided this because thinking about it now, he's actually a giant hand and I want to be kinda realistic and hands can't reproduce whatsoever, so yeah. Also he doesn't seem like the type to even want children or to be fond of them.

As for the poll, I'd suggest casting your votes now because I'm going to be closing it soon because I plan on using a character focus on Chapter 15.

I am currently working on Chapter 13 as we speak, but probably will not have it up until Tuesday or Wednesday. So if you want, if you haven't already you can answer the questions on Chapter 12.

Total Nerd Girl: If I'm not mistaken, kendo is a Japanese form of fencing.

I will update this author's note with more things, so ask me questions and I'll add the answers here!

Other than that, I thank all my readers, reviewers and followers so far for their support! I love you guys!

Q AND A

ylisse asked why Marina and the Diamonds?

- Anyways, when trying to find inspiration for this AU to really spark up, I happened to be listening to the Electra Heart album at the time. Hearing some of the songs and particularly "Primadonna" got me the spark. When listening to the beginning of the song, these lyrics really sparked it up.

Primadonna girl, yeah
All I ever wanted was the world
I can't help that I need it all
The primadonna life, the rise and fall

It made me think of Marth(just change girl to boy) wanting the everything that happens to a popular person, hence where i got the ' The Rise and Fall ' part of my title. As I continued listening to the album, more lyrics helped flow the story so well that I've decided that I was going to type this being influenced by her album(her other album, The Family Jewels is also fantastic as well.) Posting another lyric set to describe it as well(I'm not going to do the sets with all songs from the album because that will be spoilers and those aren't fun)

Don't wanna live in fear and loathing
I wanna feel like I am floating
Instead of constantly exploding
In fear and loathing

Got different people inside my head
I wonder which one that they like best
I'm done with tryin' to have it all
And endin' up with not much at all.

Going to debunk this for the story, Marth always lived his life in constant fear. He always had to put a smile on his face for his sister, fearing what could happen if she and Jagen ever found out about it. And as for the ' got different people inside my head part', well he has different personas he wants to do to impress people to like him, but doesn't know which one until he gets influenced by his ancestor(who is not like that btw). And for the last two sets, I interpret as he's done with trying to be himself just to get nothing in return.

Glad I got you listening to her though ylisse. ;)

Q: Which character is the most fun to write so far?

- That's gotta be Henry. I've always wanted to write something with him in it ever since I've played FE:Awakening and figured that he would fit well, being quite the character he already is. I love writing his terrible puns and making him creep out people as well(he's a cute, creepy guy). Also I laugh everything I think of him doing something that involves him killing something or threatening someone because he's almost like that comic relief in a story(to me), hence why he's so fun to write. Also because he's unpredictable and what he does and says too.

- Iggy

Chapter 14: Love Comes Quickly

Hello! I am back with Chapter 13. Please note that Chapter 14 might come next week because I have to focus for a test that's tomorrow and have another test in my online class that's due this week as well. No worries though, I'll work slowly as I progress.

What I tend to do(since I have a mini-writer's block) is write the middle paragraphs and ending before I approach the other aspects, which help me.

I thank everyone for reviewing and whatnot.

Anyways, for dark themes, I will not do rape, suicide(this is a tough one even if its common in high school) and abortion(I don't want to cause conflict because this is a political debate)

So I've decided to do more mild dark themes instead.

For the ones I will do though, we have domestic violence(mental/physical), school suspension, teen pregnancy, and possible therapy for Marth because he needs it. :(

I'll be asking you guys at the end of Chapter 13 to suggest some scenerios, along with character names for these themes.

Oh yeah, the winner for the poll is Lucina, so she gets to have Chapter 16 to herself.

Other than that, enjoy!

Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Groose(Legend of Zelda: Skyward Sword)
Cawlin(Legend of Zelda: Skyward Sword)
Strich(Legend of Zelda: Skyward Sword)
Merric(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Miriel(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Henry(Fire Emblem:Awakening)
Malon(Legend of Zelda: Ocarina of Time)
Gaius(Fire Emblem:Awakening)
Alex(Mario Tennis GBA)
Emmeryn(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

The next three days went rather smoothly for Marth. Samus began to get closer to him as the school week went on. Heading into first period, they wrapped up the unit about Prince Marth. Everyone got to learn that the bluenet himself was a descendant of the famous hero, thus making everyone ask him questions even Snake himself. What was even better was that Samus herself asked to hang out with him after school today!

As the time progressed, second and third hour seemed to fly by really swiftly. In PE, it was a fun day so Lucario let the kids do whatever they wanted. Thankfully Red was also in the class, so Henry focused more on his friend than anyone else. Marth wondered how Red managed to hang around a guy like him anyways, but didn't question it.

Around lunch time, Link approached his locker to drop some things off. As he opened it, someone quickly slammed it. Turning to see who it was, he saw Groose and his posse.

"Hey!" shouted the redhead. "Didn't I tell you to stay away from Zelda?!"

Link just stared at him, looking annoyed. It was times like this that he really wished he could talk so he could tell him how he felt. Grabbing his notebook, he'd write a message to tell these guys.

'*Who made you the boss of her? She can go near anyone she wants to. Zelda isn't your girlfriend Groose, just learn to accept that already,'* he wrote, glaring at the taller male. Groose went closer to Link and shoved him against the wall. Before he could go on further, a voice stopped him.

"And what do you think you're doing?!"

Turning around, the redhead and his posse saw Zelda and her friends. The brunette had a glare as she approached him.

"Stop harassing him! He hasn't done anything to you! In fact, I would go if I were you before I do something," badgered the girl. Groose backed away, knowing that he didn't want to ruin his relationship with Zelda. As the three boys left, she turned to Link and helped him up.

"I'm sorry that this happened to you Link. Groose can just be a bully sometimes." Nodding, Link and Zelda made their way into the cafeteria as they engaged in their own conversation.

Meanwhile Merric decided to head into the library for his lunch break instead. The greenet began browsing books, particularly on magic. Scoping the shelves, he eventually found one that caught his interest and pulled it out. It happened to be a book on wind magic as he grinned. Opening to check it out, he winced at the noise that was coming from the farther end of the library. Looking to see who or what it was, it turned out the anime table decided to hang out there as well.

Finding a desk, the young teen flipped through the book.

"*With this, I can finally start learning to stand up for myself and to impress her."* Grinning shyly, Merric happened to have a crush on Marth's sister Elice ever since he first laid eyes on her. He wanted to get to know her better, wanted to know the things she likes and what she did for fun. Merric also felt that he wanted to protect her from anyone or anything that goes in her way. Getting up from the desk, he headed over to Miriel's desk, handing her the book to check out.

"I'd like to check out this please."

Looking at the book, the redhead herself couldn't help but grin. "You're interested in learning the magic arts? Perhaps I can tutor you myself seeing that I'm a mage as well." She'd scan the book and hand it to him.

"Really? I'd be honored if you do so miss." Nodding, Miriel handed him a schedule and told him to meet her during those times so he can practice. He thanked her once again before heading off to meet up with Marth.

Marth headed to his Anatomy class, just to find out it was locked. Sighing, he waited outside the door as a couple of students joined him, one being Henry. The pale boy approached the bluenet, standing next to him. Not once has Marth seen a different face expression on him; it was always that same smile. He even began to wonder if Henry was blind or something or he just liked using his other senses more. Peeking over, he noticed right away that the boy was about to start a conversation with him.

"Hey Martha! Sup?"

Marth tried to shrug off what Henry just called him and forced a smile. It wasn't worth correcting someone strange as him anyways.

"Nothing much really," replied the boy. "Just waiting for Mr. Olimar to show up."

Shrugging, Henry just laughed. "That's cool. Is he a lost CAWs now?"

"What?" The bluenet tilted his head to the side, not getting what Henry exactly meant. He swore to himself that this kid just got weirder as the days went by. Seeing that Marth didn't get his joke, the silveret decided to explain it to him.

"You get it? Cause, CAWs?" he said, explaining it to him. Nodding slowly, Marth gave him a look of understanding just to get him to shut up. He started to wonder again why it was him who gets bullied and not this lunatic. Sighing, he noticed more students such as Malon and Gaius standing near the door. Looking closer, he could hear the brownish-orange haired boy moan a bit as he began to get a nosebleed. Watching him head over to the nurses office, he noticed Henry looking over with interested.

"Aw, yeah blood!" he chirped. Giving him a look of disgust, Marth finally spoke out once again.

"Henry!" he shouted. Pausing for a moment, he decided to ask him a question that popped out just now. "Pardon me, but do you have Asperger's or something? I say that because you never really seem to have a filter and just say the wackiest things, not to be rude or anything."

Thinking for a moment, the silveret just grinned. "Nope! My psychiatrist said that I don't have that. You really should watch out when saying stuff like that Marth. I know for a fact there's this blogging website I go on who would've ripped you to

shreds! That would be a cool sight to see, wouldn't it?"

Wincing, Marth just gave him a look. "No, that's terrible! How would you feel if your friends got ripped to shreds or killed even?!" he asked with slight irritation in his voice.

Shaking his head, Henry just laughed. "I wouldn't feel anything to be honest. Heck, I kill my animal friends all the time! Wanna see sometime?!"

"NO!"

Marth looked over, noticing that the redheaded girl happened to be ease dropping on their conversation due to the look of horror on her face. Looking back to Henry, the bluenet sighed hoping for the day to end faster.

"Aww," he whined. "Well, I do think we should hang out sometime though. I have tons of things to show you!"

Marth shook his head at the thought he had just now. Hanging out with Henry sounds like it'll turn out to be more of a nightmare than anything else. A short creature with a mask approached the door, opening it to let the students inside. Gaius returned by then as well, taking his seat as he had another lollipop in his mouth. The creature wrote on the whiteboard today's agenda and took a seat in the chair.

"Good afternoon class. Your teacher Mr. Olimar is at an important meeting so he couldn't make it today. I, Mr. Meta Knight, will be subbing today. He said you guys know what to work on, so I expect you to do what he wants." With those words, the creature took his seat and logged onto the computer, looking at sometimes.

Marth smiled. Today was going to be an easy day. He spent the majority of class doing his work as well as hearing Henry talk about things he could care less about. When did this kid ever shut his mouth anyways? The other students seemed to be engaged in their own conversations as well, so Marth decided to listen to the other boy. Part of him wanted him to shut up but the other part actually wanted to know more about him.

As school ended, Marth hurried ran out the double doors and waited outside for Samus. Today was the day they were finally going to hang out together. He watched the storming students head out to go home to their places for the weekend. The boy couldn't help but put a goofy smile on his face, fantasizing everything he wanted to do with the blonde. He wondered if she was even going to take him out somewhere, seeing how he can't drive yet.

Marth continued to be engulfed by his daydreams just to be ambushed by the girl herself.

"Hey! Ready to leave?" she asked.

"Y-yeah," he responded back, still getting used to her startling him.

The two began to waltz to the parking lot, watching the other students quickly take off. Once they arrived at Samus' car, Marth entered the passengers' side and buckled himself in. Samus got inside the driver's seat and started up her car and began driving away from the school.

"So Marth, before we actually decide to do anything we should probably drop off your stuff. I'm sure you'd also want to change into your regular clothes as well," suggested the blonde. The bluenet began giving her directions on how to get to his house. Five minutes later, they'd arrive as she'd park her car on the side of the house.

"You live pretty close to the school," said Samus.

"Yeah. It's actually convenient believe or not."

Marth took out the house keys from his backpack and opened the door. He noticed a note sitting on the dining room table as he grabbed it and began to read it.

Dear Marth,

I'm currently out of town right now. I suggest making yourself home until your cousin comes to pick you up at eight. I know you're always good but please be on your best behavior for them and remember to have fun.

Ps. Have lots of fun for me at Roy's party tomorrow, okay?

Love always,

Elice

Placing it back on the table, he turned to Samus as he smiled nervously.

"Well, where are my manners. Welcome to the Lowell abode, please feel free to make yourself at home!" he said politely. Sighing to himself, Marth felt a bit embarrassed, wondering if Samus judged his living arrangements.

The blonde looked at the house, walking slowly to observe its essence. It reminded her of ancient Victorian styled rooms from the history textbooks. She noticed the Prince Marth portrait and grinned, looking towards the bluenet.

"You really do resemble him Marth. It's amazing how one can look exactly like their descendant don't you think?" she asked.

"Mmhmm, to be honest I never really thought anything of his portrait until now. For the longest time, I never really thought of myself to be beautiful or anything. You know, I'm just your average joe." Marth shrugged and told her to hold on for one second. Rushing up the stairs and bolting into his room, the bluenet began to change out of his uniform. Putting on a stripped short sleeved hoodie along with some skinny jeans, he headed out to meet back with Samus.

"Sorry about that, I figured it would've been rude if I didn't get changed right away," apologized Marth. He'd show Samus around the house, even showing her the kendo dojo next to the garden outside. Afterwards, the two headed back inside and plopped themselves onto the couch. Marth's face slightly tinted red as he looked away from Samus before she could notice. Thinking of how to break the silence, he'd give himself different scenarios before going into action.

"So, how was your day Samus?" asked the bluenet.

"Well," she replied. "It was pretty alright so far but I'm sure it'd turn for the better now that you're here. Hearing Sonic having to go on about his ego in PE though made me want to punch him really bad. As much as I'd hate to admit, sometimes I just feel like quitting track just to stop hearing him talk. Other than that, my day was fine. Could have been a lot worse, but I'm glad it didn't turn out that way."

"Well that's good. My day was alright as well. I have to deal with the most, what's the best word to describe this, oh! I have to deal with the oddest person I've ever met on the planet in my fourth period. Like, I really want to be nice and help this guy but he says the strangest, most vile things I've ever heard," rambled Marth.

Perking up, Samus was interested. "Who is this if I may ask?" She'd reach over for a pillow, hugging it as she placed it between her chin.

"You know the silvered kid from our PE class? That's who I'm talking about."

"Oh Henry!" Thinking of what to say, Samus adjusted herself, placing her stomach on the couch as she looked back to Marth. "He's not really a bad guy, just strange. Believe it or not, I've went to elementary school with him."

"Really?!" Marth seemed surprised. Thinking back, it all the sudden made sense on why Henry knew her motives.

Nodding, she'd tell him "Yeah. The kid was rather distant with everyone. Nobody wanted to go near him and his family didn't help either. He happened to be a handful in the classroom to the point where the teacher had to call in his parents plenty of times. When I saw his family come in, I could tell that they never really wanted him. A few months later, he was under a parental guardian from the orphanage because one day, his family just left. Everything in the house was gone. Well that's what I've heard from the other children in my class. I know it's very hard to believe, but it's true."

"Wow, that's something. One thing, why does he always smile all the time then if he has been through all that?! It makes no sense at all… I mean, if my family did that to me I would be devastated! I'd resent them, but he always manages to keep a smile on his face," he protested. Marth's jealously of the boy only grew deeper. First, Henry got a get out of jail free card with the bullies and now, he's always able to keep an optimistic mindset. He hated how much he envied people but at the same time wanted them to suffer. Marth wanted those types of people to feel the pain he went through, the agony of having to force yourself to do tasks but he felt like that was asking for too much. Instead, he just awaited Samus' reply.

"Maybe he's good at moving on or something, who knows. I do remember that when he was younger, before his family left, he did used to display emotions. From what I've remembered, he always looked really sad or something along the lines. Whenever he approached the other kids at recess, they would just stop what they were doing and move away from him. He probably acted out of line and did things for attention as well. That's just my theory though…" She sighed, looking at the time. Placing the pillow back, Samus got up from the couch and approached Marth. Extending a hand, the blonde helped him get up as well.

"So, ready to go?" she asked. Nodding, Marth headed out of his house, but quickly stopped her. He rushed upstairs to grab the antique box and headed back down.

"I forgot to show you something!" he exclaimed. Opening it, there it revealed the headpiece Elice gave the prince before he left. Samus gawked at it, finding the tiara to be beautiful as she observed it closely.

"Wow, is that your ancestor's relic?" she asked. Samus continued to look at it, wondering how it was able to be kept in perfect condition for so long. She noticed designs embedded in it as well as the blue gem that was perched in the middle.

"Yep. It's something I'm extremely proud to have. I couldn't imagine being related to anyone else that's not the prince himself," boasted the bluenet. Marth begin to understand why his parents loved the prince dearly. Remembering the first unit in history class, he recalled all of the prince's struggles and how he eventually overcame them.

Samus looked back up at Marth, asking him something. Nodding in response, Samus grabbed the tiara, taking a close look at it before placing it on Marth's head. She adjusted it, and then dragged him over to look in the mirror inside the downstairs bathroom. Blinking, Marth looked astonished as he stared at himself.

"*Is this really me now? I mean, I almost didn't recognize myself!"* he thought. A huge grin was on Samus' face as she laughed at his expression. She found his reaction to this rather cute.

"I think it really suits you Marth. If I were you, I'd suggest wearing it for now on. Besides, you look like a prince yourself," she told him.

"R-really?" Marth looked back to himself in the mirror and then to Samus. "I guess I can. After all, I would want to wear his relic with pride, right?"

Nodding, the two headed out into Samus' car. She drove the two of them to her house which happened to be near the townhouses in Brawlville. When they arrived, Samus told Marth to stay put as she ran in. Wondering what she was up to, Marth checked his phone to see if there were any messages for him. Looking, he received a text message from Pit asking him if he was excited about the birthday party tomorrow. Marth responded back to it, telling him he was. Sighing, the bluenet looked outside the window.

Part of him felt really bad that he was ditching Roy's party to hang out with the football players. He felt like he was betraying Roy, especially since he was there for him when Ike left him. Going deep into his thoughts, he remembered yesterday that he apologized to the other bluenet for his actions. Marth decided to toss aside his differences with him for now, even though he knew the real reason why Ike left him. The boy wanted to be popular and as he focused on the attention of the other students, he started drifting away from Marth. Soon, he just completely started ignoring his existence like he wasn't even there. The bluenet recalled more, even triggering a memory.

Marth rushed towards Ike happily as he saw him outside the playground. Waving, he'd call his name just to get no response. He'd approach him, waiting happily for a hello from his best friend as Ike seemed to be talking to someone else.

"*Hey, did you hear something Ike?" said the kid.*

"*Nope, it's probably just the wind."*

"*Yeah, let's go."*

The two boys drifted off, running to do their own thing with the other well-known kids. Marth watched his best friend fade away from him, staring down at the ground. Tears ran down his cheeks, hitting the grass that sat beneath his feet. The bluenet ran to a tree, sitting down his he hid his face behind his knees. Today was the day he finally realized that his best friend was gone. He left him for the other kids, leaving him all alone. Out of everything he feared, Marth hated loneliness more than anything else. His parents already left him about a month ago and now Ike.

The boy's muffled cries turned to sobbing, wishing that he could travel back in time to save his friend. Marth's wailing caught the attention of another boy. As he continued to hide himself, the young boy approached him, holding a ball.

"*What's wrong?" he asked. Looking up, Marth saw a short redheaded boy with huge, bright blue eyes. He looked to be around his age but could be easily mistaken as a grade or two younger.*

"*My… my best friend left me alone… I have no other friends and nobody wants to even be near me," wailed the bluenet. He cried into his knees again, hiding his face from the younger boy.*

"*I can be your friend," he responded, smiling. Perking up, Marth's eyes widened a bit as he was surprised of the words that came out of this boy's mouth.*

"*R-really? You mean it?" he asked.*

"*Yep! In fact, you should join me and my friend for a game of ball!" he chirped. Approaching him, the boy handed Marth a handkerchief as he helped him up. Marth looked at him, thanking him as he wiped his face before handing it back. Smiling a bit, he decided to ask for the boy's name.*

"*W-what's your name? I'm Marth," said the bluenet.*

"*My name's Roy!"*

As Marth headed back to reality, he saw a hand waving in his face. Looking to see who it was, he noticed Samus. She was dressed out of her school uniform, sporting a baggy t-shirt along with jeans and tennis shoes. Marth never really noticed how different Samus was from the other girls until now. She happened to be more of a tomboy but it was hard to notice due to the girls being required to wear skirts at school. Nevertheless, she looked beautiful regardless of what she wore.

"Marth, earth to Marth are you there?" she said as his hearing came back to him. Looking up, he nervously grinned and laughed.

"Now I am. S-sorry about that, I got carried away…" Looking away from her, he felt embarrassed. How was this girl going to like him if he kept drifting into his own thoughts. Adjusting himself, he noticed Samus smiling, finding his little quirks charming.

"You tend to daydream a lot. That's not a problem though because hey, we all daydream at some point right?"

"Yeah." Samus drove off, taking Marth to a strip mall. As they arrived, the two got out and looked around the stores, even having fun. To them, they were just hanging out but to other people, it looked like something more. The two entered a diner, getting seating as they waited. A waiter came over to them with his pen and notebook.

"Hello! The name's Alex and I'll be your server for the evening. May I start you guys off with something to drink?" he asked.

Looking at the menu, both of them asked for a glass of water on the side along with a strawberry milkshake. Writing it down, Alex went to get them their drinks right away, giving the two time to decide on their orders. A few minutes later, Alex came back as he placed their waters near them and the strawberry milkshake in the middle along with two straws. Winking at them, he took their orders and left.

Marth looked at it, wondering if the waiter thought if they were a couple. He continued to look at the milkshake, feeling a bit strange. Samus observed it as well, shrugging.

"It's not like you have any germs right?"

"*Wait, did she just say that just now? I mean, we aren't even dating are we….?"* Still in shock, Marth would drink from one straw while Samus drank from the other. The two would discuss things as they hung out in the diner such as their life goals and whatnot. After they got their meals and ate, the two headed back outside to take Marth back to his house in time.

Samus drove Marth back home, dropping him off. Parking her car, she'd get out and walk him to the door.

"Today was really fun Samus. We really should hang out more," suggested the bluenet. His face felt hot as he looked at her.

"Yeah. Anyways, see you Monday." Turning around, Samus was about to head out until she came back. "And before I forget, I believe this is for you." Samus pecked Marth on the cheek before leaving. Marth rubbed his cheek in awe, watching the blonde leave. His face turned completely red, wondering if what just happened now was real.

"She… she kissed me! She actually kissed me!" Marth entered his house, jumping around the house in excitement.

"YES! THIS MEANS I HAVE A CHANCE, A CHANCE!" Running up the stairs, Marth grabbed his belongings and his small briefcase and waited for his cousins to arrive. A few minutes later, the doorbell rang as the teen grabbed his things and opened the door. Getting lucky, it happened to be his older cousin Emmeryn. She smiled, greeting Marth as she helped him get his stuff in her car. The two would get into the car as she began driving.

"How's my lovely cousin doing this fine evening?" she asked. Emmeryn always had a kind aura to her. Marth never seen her angry in his life as she always loved balance no matter what the consequences were.

"I'm doing great! A girl I like just kissed me!" he beamed. Marth couldn't stop thinking about Samus, even replaying the kiss over and over again.

"That's great. " She glanced at him when they came at a red light, noticing the tiara on his head. Smiling, she added "You look really good with the prince's relic on. It's a nice touch for you, especially since I haven't seen you in forever. You really grew up to be handsome now, did you?"

"I guess I really did."

Driving off, Marth couldn't help by look at the scenery that passed by them. His cousins lived in the richer part of the neighborhood as he noticed the houses looking cleaner and fancier. Eventually they arrived at the other Lowell residence as the two got out. Heading in from the garage, Marth noticed that Chrom and Lissa seemed to be out of the house.

"If you're wondering where the others are, they're out with their friends for the evening. I suggest making yourself at home in the guest room."

Marth nodded and headed to the guest room. He took out his belongings, packing it into the empty drawer's as he plopped himself on the bed. Staring up at the ceiling, he began heading off into his own thoughts again.

"*I really can't wait for tomorrow now. I guess things are starting to turn around for me after all!*"

That ends Chapter 13 folks. I just made it more sad for Chapter 14 when Marth doesn't bother showing up to Roy's birthday party and we learn about why Ike left Marth.

Now for the dark themes, I need suggestions for who can get suspended, pregnant, anything that happens in high school that is mild. Suggest me characters too while doing this, it helps me so much more!

Anyways, feel free to leave me suggestions and ideas(I can really, really use some right now)

And more temp pairings(one of the pairing suggestions I got is one I'm using for one of the final pairings too hehe). These suggestions don't have to involve Marth either.

And more characters please!

Questions(these also me with the next chapter's direction and whatnot as well)

1. What do you think's going to happen first thing on Saturday morning?

2. When should Marth ask Samus out?

3. How do you think Roy's going to react when Marth didn't show up at all, especially when he promised to.

Bonus Question

***Who do you think the strange ghost that's digging up the graves and taking corpses is.**

Fun Question(you don't have to answer this if you don't want to)

- What kind of person do you think Chrom was in high school? You can go deeper into middle and elementary if you want!

I really hoped you guys enjoyed this chapter and one more thing!

I made another poll, but this time it's another story I plan on doing(I have only two so far which is this one and the one shot I did(if you want to read my one shot, just check out my profile and whatnot). I feel like wanting to do a more light hearted story to balance the teen angst and whatnot I'm putting in for this one. So vote right away! Guests can vote too.

Chapter 15: Grave Night

Hey guys! I'm here with Chapter 14. Luckily for me, after the test a writing muse sparked and kicked away my miniature writer's block. I also realized I've been forgetting to make a list of characters I use that aren't from the Smash Brothers series and I apologize for that. I'll be updating the other chapters with that list as well so you know what game which character's from that isn't recognizable.

Another thing I failed to mention for temporary pairing suggestions is that I do accept slash pairings. In high school, we all go through an experimental phase or realize that we're not possibly straight at all.

Anyways, I made myself get really sad when typing up Roy's part in this.

And now here's Chapter 14!

List of Characters that aren't from the Smash Universe

Chrom(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Lissa(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Dampe(Legend of Zelda: Ocarina of Time)
Emmeryn(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Frederick(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Sumia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Cordelia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Eliwood(Fire Emblem: Blazing Sword)
Stahl(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

Marth slept in the guest room, having a peaceful slumber. Little did he know that he was bound to be suddenly interrupted as he continued sleeping. The sound of the door opening can be head as someone stepped inside. The figure approached the bluenet, eventually shaking him.

"Get up!"

Jumping, the sleepy Marth woke up, almost falling off the bed. Looking to see who even barged in, he gave a grouchy look as he noticed it was just Chrom. The older blue haired man was still dressed in his pajamas, even looking sleepy as well. Being curious, Marth turned to read the clock realizing that he got him up at seven thirty in the morning. Groaning, he'd put on his glasses and looked at his cousin.

"What do you want?" he mumbled, still drowsy from being woken up suddenly.

"You're going to learn how to drive today, so get up."

Getting annoyed, Marth tossed the covers back on himself and turned the other way. He groaned out of irritation, trying his best to ward off Chrom's advances.

"I already told you my answer. Now for the love of god, let me sleep…"

Chrom shook his head, not taking no for an answer. He'd remove the cover off of Marth, tossing it on the floor as the bluenet jumped once again. Turning around, Marth glared at him for a moment until he heard a sound of a vase nearby breaking. Both boys turned to the source, noticing the vase that was perched up at the table fell down. Chrom had a look of embarrassment on his face, knowing that he accidently just broke one his sister's vases.

"Oops…" Moving the cover and placing it back on the side of the bed, the two boys just stared at the now broken vase.

"Now look what you've gone and done! You're always breaking everything I swear! Now we're going to both get in trouble and I wasn't even a part of this!" complained the bluenet. "This would of never happened if you had never barged in here uninvited to force me to learn how to drive."

Sighing, Chrom shook his head. He knew Marth always made a big deal out of the simplest things, especially if it was going to bring attention on him. He'd leave the room for a spilt second to get the dust pan to pick up the mess before someone else wakes up. A few minutes later, the older bluenet came back, scooping up the mess. He told Marth to follow him, still wanting to teach him how to drive after the boy protested.

The two bluenets made their way out of the guest room, closing the door behind them. They scurried down the halls, heading to the garage to get outside to dump it in the garbage can. What they failed to notice was another person was up and about. The person happened to be reading the newspaper, having their cup of java to the side of the table. Hearing the footsteps of the two boys, they glanced up noticing that Chrom was hiding something behind his back.

"You boys are up pretty early. This is unusual for the both of you, especially you Chrom," said the older man. He was curious to what Chrom was hiding as he placed the paper down on the table. Both boys turned around, looking at the man who almost caught them. The brunet took a sip of his coffee, glancing at Chrom's arms.

"Good morning Frederick. It's a pleasant surprise to see you up this early as well. Don't you have to go to work soon or something," rambled Chrom, trying to obviously not look suspicious. Continuing to look at the two, the older man sighed.

"You know I'm off on the weekends. Say, is there any reason why you two are up so early this morning?" he asked, being quite curious.

"Actually, I was going to teach my cousin here how to drive. He recently got his permit, so I figured why not get him prepared so he can get his license. You know, so once he gets it, he can pick up and drop off Lissa instead of me…" he answered.

"Yeah! I should get started on driving practice while my sister's away. It'd make it really easy on her when she comes back that I know some of the basics," said Marth, pitching in. Frederick's eyes continued to have that narrow gaze as if he wasn't buying their excuses. Sighing, the man picked up the newspaper and let them go. He knew they were both telling the truth and lying at the same time but it wasn't worth starting something this early in the morning.

The two boys jolted out, heading into the garage as Chrom threw away the remains. They both sighed of relief, fearing that Frederick would have caught onto them very quickly. Opening the garage, Chrom took out his car keys from his pajama pocket as he took the driver's seat. Marth took a deep breath, knowing that there was no turning back now. Sitting in the passengers' side, the older boy took off. After a minute, he would go into an empty parking lot, parking the car as he ushered Marth to get out and switch seats. The bluenet heavily sighed, getting into the driver's seat as Chrom sat next to him.

"Now, the first thing we're going to do is start up the car. I'm pretty sure you can do that without having me show you it, right?" explained Marth's cousin. Nodding, Marth turned the keys upward, starting the engine up.

"Good. Next, we're going to change gears. My car happens to be automatic, meaning you don't have to drive stick. Now, what I want you to do is put your feet on the break while changing it from being in park to drive." Marth placed his foot on the brake, changing gears from park into drive. Chrom nodded again in approval, a smile even showing up on his face due to how well Marth was doing so far.

"Now, I want you to get a feel of the gas pedal. Remove your foot from the break and lightly tap on the gas pedal. Please keep in mind that if you press it really hard, that causes the car to get into really high speeds which can get us in trouble and possibly killed."

Marth did as he was told, lightly placing his foot on the pedal as he began to drive. Being surprised at his results, Marth decided to go around the parking lot. He'd listen to Chrom's directions as he turned on his turn signal and pressed the breaks to make turns. After a few minutes, he told Marth to get between the lines and park. The bluenet done so, parking the car to switch back with Chrom.

"You did very well for your first time. I'm proud of you," exclaimed Chrom. Marth slightly blushed, scratching the back of his head while chuckling a bit. The two switched places as Chrom began to drive off.

"Since I forced you to get up this morning, I've decided that I'm going to treat you to a specialty coffee at Brawlbucks," said Chrom.

"You better," joked the teen as he rested his eyes for a moment.

The two safely arrived at Brawlbucks. Marth got out of the car, following his cousin inside. The aroma of freshly grinded coffee beams danced in the air. Looking inside, Marth recognized the two girls who happened to be working at the same time. He knew they happened to be friends of Fox and Falco knowing that he remembered these girls from the ROTC booth.

"Welcome to Brawlbucks, may I get you – OH HEY CHROM!" greeted the cashier. She had long, curly light brown hair and

a look of innocence to her. The long redheaded girl was also there, greeting his cousin as well. Both girls had their hair tied back in a ponytail. Getting a glimpse of their nametags, the girl who greeted his cousin loudly was Sumia and her coworker being Cordelia.

"So, what are you having today?" she asked, getting ready to place in their orders. Looking at the menu, Chrom looked to his sleepy cousin who asked for a café latte and a fruit cup. Getting Marth's order down, the other bluenet decided on a bagel along with a café mocha. Taking their orders, Sumia told Chrom the total amount and he paid. While waiting for their java, Cordelia stared at Chrom.

"*He's so dreamy. Too bad I'll never have a chance with him*," she thought. Sighing, she finished fixing up Marth's latte as she placed the fruit cup next to it. Marth got up to pick up his order, taking it back to the table and took a sip of his drink. Sumia decided to give Chrom his. As the girl happily walked over, she ended up tripped over nothing. Falling onto the ground, Chrom's mocha flew, burning his chest in the process.

"AUUUUUUUUGH!"

Cordelia rushed out of the bar, handing Chrom a spare t-shirt! Sumia moaned, getting up as she felt really embarrassed.

"I'm so sorry Chrom! I really am," whined the brunette. She sighed, going on how she was useless and could never do anything right. Getting up, she turned away and felt like crying.

"I'll…. I'll make you a new one, yes!" Storming back into the bar, she whipped up another café mocha along with giving him a fresh bagel. She still badgered herself for being so careless and useless. Chrom sighed, changing into the t-shirt Cordelia offered.

"Sumia, it's not your fault. Accidents happen okay?" he told her, trying to get the girl to cheer up. Marth on the other hand, just ate his fruit cup, his thoughts trailing off to yesterday. He still reminisced that kiss, wondering if he should ask Samus to go out with him on Monday. Chrom finally returned back at the table, having a fresh mocha with him along with his bagel. He noticed his cousins' look and tilted his head to the side.

"Marth are you daydreaming again?"

"Y-yes, I mean no! Why would I be doing that?! It's too early in the morning to go off into your own thoughts right," he defended, speaking hastily when doing so.

"Suuure," said the older bluenet, giving him a playful smile. "I know you too well Marth. Say, got a girl on your mind or something?"

Marth's face tinted red, looking away from his cousin. "Y-yeah. She kissed me on the cheek yesterday and I was wondering, should I ask her out when I get back on Monday? I mean, I'm pretty sure you've dated plenty of girls when you were in high school…"

"Well…." Chrom began to think for a moment. "If she kissed you that means you already have your answer."

"I guess that makes sense… yeah, I'm going to ask her Monday. Thanks a bunch Chrom." The two bluenets finished, getting up. Before heading out, Chrom told the two girls goodbye and wished them the best of luck for the rest of their shift. Heading back into the car, the two drove off to head back to the other Lowell residence.

"So Marth, when is your friend's birthday party anyways?" asked the older male. He remembered him mentioning it four days ago at the ice cream parlor.

"It's today at three," answered Marth. He sighed, knowing that he wasn't heading to Roy's party this year. Instead, he was going to hang out with the football players for a while before they check out the graveyard at eight.

"Need a ride there by any chance when the time comes?" offered Chrom. Marth winced at the thought and had to come up with an excuse quickly.

"No. I can take the bus to get to Roy's. Besides, I wouldn't want to be holding you down anyways. I'm sure you get stressed as it just having to drive Lissa around," exclaimed the teenager. Chrom's brow rose for a second, not buying Marth's excuse but he eventually shrugged it off.

"Alright then, that makes it a lot easier for me. Say, wouldn't you at least want to go to the mall or something to get Roy a present?"

"Um Chrom, we're still in our pajamas…."

They'd arrive back at the house, Marth scampering inside while Chrom locked the car door. Looking over to Marth as he left, Chrom couldn't help but feel something was fishy. He remembered how much his cousin disliked public transportation and never turned down a ride to get to a far location such as Roy's. *"Something tells me to keep an eye on him. Marth's up to something and I need to find out what it is."*

As they entered the house, the two boys can see that Lissa and Emmeryn were finally awake. The older blonde looked ready to head out the door, going into work. She'd greet the two boys, telling Marth to have fun at Roy's before leaving. The TV can be heard from the other room as it just got turned on. Lissa headed into the kitchen to greet the two boys while holding a DVD in her left hand.

"Where did you guys go?" she asked, yawning.

"I was teaching Marth here how to drive. After that, we got some coffee and now we're here," replied Chrom. Marth noticed the DVD in her hand. Being curious, he assumed it was another one of her anime movies.

"Hey Marth, want to watch a movie with me?" asked the blonde. She held it up, showing it to her older cousin. Reading the cover, the anime movie she wanted to watch was called *The Girl Who Leapt Through Time*. He continued to stare at the cover some more before deciding.

"Lissa, you know I don't really watch anime," exclaimed the boy. "Why are you always trying to get me to watch this stuff anyways? Not to be rude, but anime is just too strange for me." Heading out, Marth added "I should start freshening myself up. After all, I wouldn't want to look like a mess for Roy's party."

The two just watched Marth head off to get ready for the day. Looking to her brother, Lissa exchanged looks with him. "Do you want to watch it with me Chrom?" she asked, pouting.

"I will in a bit, but right now I have other things on my mind." Sighing, the bluenet finished the last of his mocha before throwing out the cup. Chrom left the kitchen to get dressed for the day as well.

As the time for Roy's party came closer, Marth began to get nervous. Anxiety attacked him, eating his stomach whole as he began to feel guilty. He'd constantly reassure himself, telling himself that it was going to be okay. The bluenet got out his contact lenses, putting them on. He debated whenever to put on his ancestor's prized possession on or not, but decided against it. After he finished, Marth left the guest room, passing Chrom on the way out.

"You're heading over to Roy's birthday party I take it?" he asked. Nodding, Marth quickly left before Chrom said another word. Being suspicious, the older bluenet decided to follow him as kept himself as far away from Marth as possible. Little did he know, his younger sister decided to tag along without his permission.

"Psst, what are you doing Chrom?!" she questioned. Lissa was bored out of her mind, so she figured the best way to entertain herself was to hang out with her older brother. Jumping a bit, the older bluenet turned around and quickly hid her behind the bush.

"I'm keeping tabs on our cousin," he answered in a soft yet stern whisper. Nodding, she questioned why. Lissa knew that Marth was usually a quiet kid who kept to himself but like Chrom, she felt like something was up.

"Can I tag along too? I'm pretty bored right now and Maribelle's not available at the moment. She's out of town with her family for the weekend." At first, Chrom paused and took a good moment to think about this. He figured it would be better than leaving his little sister all alone in the house especially since Frederick went off to run some errands.

After a good minute or two, he finally broke the silence. "Alright you can come. Just remember to stay behind me and be very quiet."

Marth looked around, taking a different direction that was the opposite of Roy's house. His cousins followed after him, wondering what he was up to. It was even more strange that Marth didn't even head over to his best friend's party. The two continued following the bluenet as they wondered where he was even going. About forty-five minutes later, the two followed Marth to Burazazu High. Quickly jumping into the bushes and exchanging glances, they wondered why Marth would even be at school on a Saturday.

The bluenet sighed, seeing two cars come by and park. The football players got out of the car, heading towards the bluenet. The jocks were surprised to see Marth not even back down on his word and grinned, being pleased that the

loser even showed up.

"Wow, I'm surprised you actually showed up," exclaimed Douglas, approaching the scrawny boy. Marth looked at the group, seeing that DK, Bowser, Ganondorf, Wolf and Dedede tagged along.

"Yeah," added Wolf. "I was pretty sure you would have chickened out by now. I guess you really do have the guts to go to the graveyard with us at eight." Bowser gave off a weird look, shaking his head in disapproval.

"What?! You guys actually invited him?!" exclaimed the beast. Douglas held his hand up, telling Bowser to stop. "Anyways, we should chill out before we head over. Besides, we got four hours to kill and I promised Goroh and Jody to race them today."

Marth broke his silence, speaking. "Wait… you race?" Out of all people, he expected Douglas to be the last person to do that kind of thing, then again, he always sped to school in the morning.

"Course. I've been drag racing for as long as I remember. In fact, I want to be a professional driver someday you know, but that's not the point. Now, let us leave before we cause any suspicion. Nodding, the group along with Marth left the school grounds.

Meanwhile, Roy stat on the porch outside of his house as he waited for Marth's arrival. Lilina stepped outside along with Pit, looking to where the redhead's gaze was and then back at each other.

"Roy, why don't you come inside and have some fun," suggested the bluenette. He looked over to her, smiling a bit before he sighed.

"Don't worry about me guys. You can go on ahead without me. I'll be in a few minutes, I promise," said the redhead. Nodding, Lilina waved before heading back inside. Pit, on the other hand, knew something was wrong.

"Roy, something's bothering you. What is it?" he asked, taking a seat next to him. The angel never had seen Roy like this in his entire life. He tilted his head, wondering what Roy could even be thinking about.

"It's nothing. I'm just surprised that Marth's running late. It's never like this with him. The Marth I know is usually on time for everything," replied Roy, sighing. Looking at the brunet, he'd tell Pit to meet him inside. The angel seemed puzzled at first, but got up and went inside Roy's house leaving the redhead alone.

"*Marth, where are you?! It's not like you to be late at all…*"

Chrom and Lissa decided to kill time by visiting stores. They knew that it was useless to keep tabs on Marth during this hour, especially if he was out with those ruffians. The two entered a restaurant, getting seated right away. A familiar face approached the two as he went to take their order.

"Good evening. The name's Stahl and I'll be your waiter for this- oh hey Chrom, I didn't know you were coming today," bantered the dark haired greenet. He'd take out his notepad and pencil as he waved to Lissa as well.

"Well, I've figured I might as well eat dinner since I'm out. And what better place is there to come to than the place you work at," exclaimed the bluenet. The two asked for Cola as Stahl went to get the drinks right away. He'd come back very fast with them and set them down on the table before taking their order.

"Anyways, are you getting the usual Chrom?"

"You know me pretty well," he teased.

"And for you Lissa?"

"I'll take the club sandwich with seasoned fries!" she told the waiter. Jolting down their orders, Stahl headed off to wait the other tables. Lissa took a sip of her soda, looking at her older brother and groaned.

"I can't believe Marth's hanging out with those football players. They're so mean!" she complained. "Every time I see them, they're always picking on someone. I remembered last year when they used to give Ricken a hard time because he looks like a twelve year old. They also picked on my other friends too and ugh, I can't stand them!"

"Did they happen to pick on you by any chance?" asked Chrom, getting a protective tone in his voice. If there was one thing he was, Chrom was very protective of both of his sisters. He promised himself to never let anything bad happen to

either Lissa or Emmeryn. Lissa shook her head in response which made the bluenet sigh of relief.

"Good. I would have had to beat some brains out if they did. Now, the thing is though, why would Marth be hanging out with them in the first place? This is not like him at all."

Taking another sip, she answered "Maybe he wants something from them, who knows." Chrom's eyebrows arched in surprise as he perked up and leaned closer from the other side of the booth.

"Is there something you haven't been telling anyone?" he questioned.

"Well, every time I see Marth in school, he looks really sad. The football players constantly harass him along with these other two bullies called the Wario brothers. Now thinking about it, with his sudden change of image, I think Marth's trying to get into their ranks."

"… That makes no sense Lissa."

"What I mean is, he's trying to become one of them. One of the popular kids so he can be respected and adored. I think he's hanging out with them to prove that he's not the same Marth he used to be."

It took a moment to let the sudden information sink into Chrom's head. Stahl came back, placing their orders down as he told them to enjoy before heading off.

"Oh gods Lissa, why didn't you tell me this?!" The older teen clenched his fists together in anger. He couldn't believe what he was hearing from his sister's mouth. Looking back, he never realized it until now that his cousin always forced a smile on his face. He started to regret not asking him what's wrong while he was still in high school.

"Well, I… I was afraid that if I did, they will go after me too! Ganondorf's magic can get really scary, I've seen him use it on Lyon!" The blonde girl shook, trying to hold back her tears. Chrom started reassuring her, telling her that it wasn't her fault. The man figured that he had a few asses to kick after all.

It started to get really late. Everyone was gathered around Roy, singing happy birthday to him. The redhead blew out the candle and got up from his chair, heading outside. His friends exchanged confused looks as his father told them to stay inside.

Eliwood followed his son outside, placing his hand on the boy's shoulder. "Roy, you haven't been yourself all day," said the older redhead. "Is there something wrong?"

The younger redheaded boy looked away from his father's gaze as he looked down at the ground. "It's just that Marth's running really late. I've been getting worried about him all day, hoping that he didn't have an asthma attack or ended up getting mugged or something!"

Eliwood's expression dropped as he sighed. He knew that Marth's lung issues were under control so he had to bring up the truth to Roy. Out of all the things he despised doing, Eliwood really hated hurting his son. He sighed deeply as his son turned back to him, their blue eyes meeting one another.

"I hate to break it to you but I'm afraid he ain't coming Roy." The younger redhead winced, not wanting to believe his father's words. He wanted to believe that Marth realized that he couldn't make it to the party, he wanted to believe that Marth was going to show up regardless how late it was.

"Are you sure? Marth would never do that, he promised," defended Roy. Eliwood sighed once again, seeing the hurt in Roy's eyes.

"I'm afraid so," replied the older man. "If he was coming, he would have sent you a text message a long time ago or left a message on the phone. The entire time you guys were having fun, I didn't hear anyone's phones go off or anything."

Roy's face expression dropped as he looked away. "I thought we were best friends Marth… ever since she came into the picture, you've been acting so different lately. I should've known from the beginning but I was such a fool to keep doubting the truth…" he muttered. Memories flooded through Roy's mind, attacking him with Marth. He remembered all the times he helped Marth cheer up, the fun times they had together and everything. It all hurt him so much to see his best friend change from the boy he used to be into someone else. Roy knew he was going to lose him sooner or later but refused to believe it.

"*I guess everything I did for you… was all for nothing.*"

Bringing his father into a hug, he buried his face in his chest and started sobbing. It hurt to finally realize that your best friend left you for someone else.

The boys headed into the graveyard. Marth stayed alongside Douglas as they looked around. Fog scattered in the air as the sounds of crows echoed through, never letting the dead rest in peace. The only sounds that could besides the birds were the sound of their breaths. Dedede winced at the silence, almost wanting to turn back.

Wolf looked at him and couldn't help but smirk. "Scared dude?"

"N-no! Of course not, hell why would I be?!" defended the penguin. Wolf gave him a look that doubted his answer. Marth looked around, wondering if his parents' graves were even here. Bowser yawned, being bored.

"Bwah! Why is it that we're even out here again?! I could have been home right now watching a movie."

"Well," explained DK. "We're trying to see if that ghost who digs up graves and takes corpses is real or not, duh. Didn't I tell you that yesterday and the day before?!"

"Guys enough!" interrupted Ganondorf. "We didn't come all the way here to hear bickering, alright?! Now then…" The gang followed Douglas as they went deeper in. Not from far, they could see a faint light as the grave keeper, otherwise known as Dampe was doing his job. They took note to stay far away from it as possible, knowing that they'll get in trouble if caught. As they ventured on, clouds started to cover up the night sky, aiding the fog as it made things harder to see. Marth began to shiver, getting cold as they forwarded on. The faint sounds of digging can be heard as Douglas stopped in his tracks.

"Psst, guys… look," he whispered. Peering over, they saw a ghost digging at a grave. Their eyes widened at the sight, not believing what they just saw. Douglas blinked in disbelief, thinking his eyes were playing a trick on him. When he looked again, the ghost stayed in the same position. The group slowly moved closer to get a better glimpse of the phantom itself. Gasping, the ghost itself happened to look like Dampe as it turned around and looked at them. Douglas started to slowly back away as it approached the group. He ended up tripping as he hit a tree, causing birds to fly.

Dampe himself turned around as well. "WHO GOES THERE?!" he yelled. The grave digger himself wanted to know who kept messing around with the grave as well. He shined his lamp in their direction, hoping to catch the culprit tonight.

"Guys… it's every man for themselves!" exclaimed DK.

The football players panicked and ran away. Bowser pushed Marth, using him as a decoy. Trying to get up as fast as he can, the bluenet began running as the light headed towards him. Finding himself at a dead end, he cried for his life until a hand reached him, pulling him out of the graveyard and into an abandoned shed. The hand covered Marth's mouth, telling him to keep quiet as Dampe's footsteps could be heard outside. It's touch was extremely cold as if their blood hardly flowed into their hands itself. After a few minutes, the figure removed its hand from Marth's mouth as it opened the door. Getting a good glimpse of his savior, Marth felt disappointed because they wore a black cloak over their body. The mysterious stranger grabbed Marth's hand once again, leading the way to safety. Afterwards, it took them both into the forest.

As Marth was about to thank them, another light shined on them. The bluenet quickly turned around and panicked as he saw his cousins.

"Some birthday party right…" brought up the older bluenet. The two siblings moved closer to Marth as the cloaked figure backed away a little.

"Who do you think you are lying to us like that!? Marth, you could have really gotten yourself hurt or even worse, killed!" From what Marth could tell, Chrom was furious.

"I… I…" Marth paused. He couldn't think of any excuses to back him up as he froze. Rain started pouring from the sky, mourning for the lost corpses. The sound of a car parking echoed throughout the woods as another light came towards their direction. Frederick approached the three, looking very irritated.

"Where the hell were you guys?!" he exclaimed. The three paused, glancing at each other to find a good excuse. The brunet sighed, looking at all of them.

"Do you know how worried your sister is right now?! You didn't even bother to contact her about your whereabouts. All three of you, get into the car now!"

The three did not speak a word as they headed into the car. Lissa looked back, noticing the cloaked figure watching

them as they were drenched by the rain.

"Frederick… can we please take whoever that is with us? Please…" she begged. He sighed, obviously not in the mood to hear anything.

"Unfortunately I can't. That person's a stranger we know nothing about. What if I take them in just to see you guys murdered before my eyes tomorrow?" Understanding, Lissa just entered the car. Marth wanted to defend the mysterious figure, especially after they saved him but he figured it was best to keep his mouth shut. He turned towards the window as they drove away, watching as the figure looked back at them, not moving from its spot.

Arriving home, the three stepped inside as they quickly went into their rooms.

"I'll think of a punishment for you two tomorrow, do you understand?!" informed the brunet. Emmeryn gazed at him, feeling relieved that the three young ones were alright yet sad that they had to get punished.

"Frederick, I think you're being too hard on them…" she exclaimed. He looked to her and sighed.

"They have to learn a lesson Emmeryn. Those kids can't be protected forever. Sooner or later, they're going to have to learn the consequences of their own actions…"

Marth looked towards him before heading off. "Are you going to tell Elice…?" Getting no reply, the boy walked to the guest room and changed. He sighed, regretting the fact he didn't go to Roy's birthday party after all. Opening up his cellphone, he received a ton of messages from his friends.

The only thing it said was "Where are you?!"

And that's it for Chapter 14! In the next chapter, we'll get a better glimpse of Lucina herself!

I'll be taking suggestions of what you'll want to see addressed in Chapter 15, so list your heart out right away. I'll also be in need of a title of well, seeing how I got some of the basics down for it, but can't seem to think of a title.

Anyways, there's a poll that I want you guys' to vote on for a story I plan on doing that is more cheerful than this one.

Now, story question time!

1. If you found out a relative of yours(whenever it be a sibling or a cousin) was being bullied, how would you react? Would you react in the same matter that Chrom did or would you react differently?

2. Who do you think the stranger that rescued Marth is.

3. If you were one of the football players, who would you bully and why?

4. Meant to ask this one on Chapter 13, but why do you think Henry's not bullied?

Bonus Question

*** Should the new student in Chapter 16 have the same class schedule as Marth?**

That's it for the questions! Stay tuned in for Chapter 15!

Chapter 16: Regret

Hey guys, I'm back with a freshly batched up Chapter 15. To be honest, its not my best seeing how I was burnt out on ideas after the test, but I managed to purge on through.

I'm going to answer the questions I got from superjimmy here, figuring that it'd be seen more here. :)

Q: Which characters would you like to incorporate into the story in the future?

A: For now, I have none at the top of my head but I'm definitely going to incorporate the character's that were suggested to me.

Q: Let's see...Smashbook and Brawlbucks. I see you are "parodying" the likes of Facebook and Starbucks instead of using, you know, the real things. Makes sense since Brawlville isn't actually set in the United States. What other things do you plan on parodying? (i.e. McDonalds, Twitter). And will they all have 'Smash' and 'Brawl' in them? And what made you decide to use parodies instead of the real things?

A: I plan on parodying things like McDonalds, stores in the malls, things that are seen and used in everyday life. Some will have ' smash' and 'brawl' with them, but for the others, I plan on getting creative and using things such as for example, Mushroom King(BK parody using Mushroom Kingdom). And for parodies, I've figured since this universe isn't really related to the real world, I figured I might as well get creative with it and add SSB elements to the story.

Q: How long will the story be, 'cause it's really good so far.

A: From what I'm looking at, if I want to incoporate everything in the story, its going to be long, so don't worry. Believe it or not, this is my first fanfic and I'm actually quite happy with how it's turning out to far. :)

In this chapter, we get a better insight on Lucina and her motives! Another leisure chapter, so it isn't as long as the usual ones.

The sun's rays made its way through the clouds, waking up the plants from their drenched slumber. Lucina tossed and turned, clutching onto her blanket. She grunted in her sleep as the girl happened to be stuck in a nightmare. When it got to the scariest part, she quickly awoke, clutching her blanket even harder. Panting, her forehead felt hot as sweat dripped. Lucina stared off into space, deep in her own thoughts. Forcing herself up, she managed to snap out of it and freshen up for the day.

The bluenette made her way through the hallway, being greeted by the overabundance of maids and butlers. One of them happened to stop her for a second to greet here.

"Hello milady. Did you fare well last night?" he asked, bowing. Lucina's face turned a little red, feeling that the everyday flattering from their house workers was a bit too much. Forcing a small smile, the bluenette nodded.

"Yes. I have a question to ask of you," she replied. Perking a brow, the butler let the young lady speak.

"Are my parents back yet?" asked the bluenette.

Shaking his head in response, the butler sighed. "I'm afraid not milady. Their business trip is taking longer than expected. From what it seems, they won't be back for a good while."

"I see."

The butler let Lucina proceed on, heading back to his duties. The girl made her way out of the steep hallway and headed towards the dining hall. Another butler scurried across the room, pulling out a chair as he insisted for the girl to sit down. The chef came out of the kitchen, serving a plate full of waffles, orange juice, some fruit and a slice of toast on the side. He'd bow before leaving along with butler to leave the bluenette girl in piece.

Lucina looked at her meal, sighing. *"There always never here,"* she thought. *"I should be used to this by now but, I just can't."*

Lucina begin recalling her parents in her mind. She remembered that they happened to be wealthy business owners. They ran their own corporation and always spent their life doing their job. The two always happened to be engulfed in the work place, never having time for their daughter. They've missed everything from birthday parties to even being a part of

her life. The bluenette repeatedly told herself that she'd be used to this by now however, deep down, part of her yearned for mother and father. Sighing softly, the girl dug into her meal, eating it slowly.

When she finished, the girl got up and stormed out of the kitchen to head out. A maid called after her, chasing the young girl before she caught up.

"Lady Lucina wait!" called the maid. Stopping, the bluenette turned around and met face to face with the maid.

"Before you head out today, don't forget this," she exclaimed. The maid handed Lucina her cellphone, placing it gently on her palm.

"Right," she responded, nodding. Lucina headed out the door, going through the garden and heading out the mansion gates.

Another girl sat outside a small café, drinking a cup of coffee. She constantly glimpsed at her cellphone, checking the time every minute. The young girl looked up at the sky, admiring the clouds that passed by. Continuing to be engulfed, the brunette couldn't help but smile. While her gaze was focused by it, she didn't happen to notice that someone pulled the chair and sat next to her. Being startled, the girl slightly panicked, getting a good glance at the intruder. Seeing it was only Lucina, the adolescent sighed of relief.

"Oh Lucina, you've scared me for a moment there," she exclaimed. The bluenette chuckled a bit, grinning at her friend's reaction.

"I didn't mean to do that Morgan. I thought you'd notice me coming right away," Lucina said, feeling a bit bad for startling her. Morgan waved her right hand in response, telling her that it's fine. The two girls began conversing about their plans for today; from checking out stores to even eating out together. As Morgan chattered on, Lucina squinted as she recognized a familiar figure from far away.

Link was strolling through the neighborhood, enjoying its presence. His eyes scoped the area as he observed the local fruit stands, boutiques and even a café down the corner. Coming closer, the Hylian saw a familiar face, recalling who it was right away. Shuffling his left hand into his pocket, the dirty blonde took out the golden locket, taking a deep breath before approaching the two girls. Afterwards, he headed on over as he got a confused look from Morgan. Extending his hand, he handed Lucina back her locket.

The bluenette seemed a bit puzzled at first, wondering how he ended up with her piece of jewelry but she ended up taking it anyways. She knew its been missing since the day she met him but didn't think she'd ever see her locket again.

"… Thank you," she said. Morgan continued to have a confused look as Link left to continue on with his day. Peering her head over to her friend, she broke the awkward silence.

"Um Lucina? Who was that?!"

"Just a stranger I met the other day. I never really caught his name or anything. It's nothing important!" Getting up, the two girls trailed, getting on the bus as it arrived. In a few minutes, both of them got off, heading over to the giant tree near the lake.

Marth decided to take a walk to clear his head from last night. The bluenet continued to regret not going to Roy's birthday, knowing that Frederick might tell Elice what he's done. Sighing, he decided to stroll through the park. He observed children playing from far away. Scanning the area, his eye caught two young boys playing as swordsman.

The bluenette himself couldn't help but smile, reminiscing all the times he played as a swordsman with Ike during his youth. However, as he remembered playing that game with Roy as well, his smile dropped. Marth felt like he betrayed his best friend. Little did he know, things were about to get worse.

Speak of the devil, Roy himself was taking a stroll along the park as well. The redhead tried to do everything in his power to forget about last night's events but it failed. It didn't help that he happened to see Marth here as well. Approaching him, Roy tried his best to stay calm, but instead, he blew up.

"Marth!" he shouted, anger being heard in his tone. The redhead stormed up to him, getting a surprised reaction from the other.

"Roy! I'm so… glad to see you here," he answered, his voice dropping. As the redhead came closer to him, Marth took a step back.

"Where the hell were you last night?!" Roy hissed. Marth winced, trying to think of the best excuse he could give his best friend.

"Well… I… I." Marth began to stumble over his own words, realizing that the one thing he couldn't ever do was lie to Roy.

"Let me guess, you were out with Samus am I right?!" he guessed. Roy rolled his eyes as he glared at the bluenet.

"I wasn't with Sa-!" Marth was quickly cut off by his angry friend.

"Ever since you started hanging out with Samus, you've been ignoring us. I hate to be the bearer of bad news, but she's just using you."

"No, that's not true! Samus isn't like that at all," defended Marth. He felt his blood boiling, getting irritated that Roy was even accusing Samus of doing such horrible deeds.

Sighing, Roy just shook his head, not buying any of it. "You're a good liar, you know that? Who was there for you when Ike fucked you over, who was there for you when those bastards in the seventh grade kept harassing you! Hell, who was even here for you last year when Douglas wouldn't stop hurting you?!" he shouted.

"Roy, please stop…" Marth started getting scared, not liking the direction this conversation was going. As the two boys argued, Lucina and Morgan turned their heads to the scene from their spot.

"I wonder what's going on?" asked Morgan. She was curious to go get a closer look, but Lucina prevented her from doing so. The bluenette was lost in translation as she observed the two boys.

"You know what, I'm done Marth! This is goodbye!" Roy stormed away but quickly turned around. " One more thing," he shouted. " If Samus fucks you over, don't come crying to me about it!"

The two girls watched the scene unfold at its end, Morgan shrugging as she turned to Lucina. The brunette's phone started going off, as she picked it up.

"Hello?" she said. "Oh, I see... Do I have to?! Awww, okay." Hanging up, she gave a sad look to Lucina as she got up. "I'm sorry Lucina, but I have to go. I got in trouble because my mother fell into my trap. See you tomorrow!"

Morgan left, leaving the bluenette all alone. Lucina sighed, knowing she wouldn't see Morgan tomorrow or in fact, be even attending the academy anymore. She had other plans on her mind, one of them being masquerading as a boy in Burazazu High. Getting up, Lucina decided to head back to the lonely home that was her mansion.

Stepping inside, another butler greeted her at the door.

"Milady, this came in for you!" He handed her a package before heading off. Grabbing it, the girl stormed into her room to open it. Removing the bubble wrap gently, she lifted up the object which happened to be a mask. Observing it, a grin formed on her face as she can now fully begin her plan.

The teenage girl stared at herself in the bathroom. Looking around, she'd begun lifting up her hair and tying it. She'd start to hide her long hair, braiding it fit under the shorter layer. After she finished, the girl looked at herself in the mirror. She looked like a plausible boy, but Lucina knew in order to completely look the part, she had to do one more thing. The bluenette walked out of the bathroom, heading over back into her bedroom.

Lucina looked at the mask that she obtained from her friend. Inspecting it, she'd get a good glimpse of it before placing it on her face. She packed her belongings; from clothes to even special mementos. The bluenette closed up the bag, heading out of her room. She'd make her way through the corridor, getting a final glimpse of what she was leaving behind.

Making her way to the front door, she turned around and took a good look of what she was abandoning.

"It's not like they'll miss me anyways. It's only for the best," she murmured.

Lucina made her way out of her own home to start life anew under a new guise.

That's it for Chapter 15. Tune in for the next chapter when we get a new student! This time I have a gist of what I know is going to happen, so this chapter should be faster to write than this one was.

Anyways, Lucina's now a finally character in the story.

Also for another mild dark theme, I was thinking about character deaths? Would that be fine with you guys(I'm going to say this now, nobody's dying by suicide, end of story)? Like, someone gets into a car accident and dies and just natural causes I guess? Just put your answer in the review and even suggest a few deaths if you of course agree with it helping the story.

Remember, feel free to leave ideas and suggestions for the next chapter or even the later ones!

Story Question time!

1. Do you feel as Marth moves into popularity that his original friend group is going to separate(as in hang out with completely different people)? If so, who do you think they'll migrate to?

2. Who are you guys enjoying in the story so far? Which characters are your favorites and which ones are your least favorite?

3.[SPOILER] Do you think Lucina's plan will eventually backfire? How do you think it'll backfire?

4. Do you think Marth and the new kid will get along?

For the poll, I'm going to leave it up until I post Chapter 16, giving you guys more time to vote if you haven't already!

And the new student is going to have the same schedule as Marth!

Also for the spoiler thing, I put that there because I know the answer, but I'm curious to see what you guys think it is.

Anyways, Iggy out!

Chapter 17: Surprise, Surprise

I am back with the awaited chapter 16! As for the poll, the winning option is the Bake off contest, which I'll be starting on soon! It'll be shorter than this story, but it'll still be loads of fun.

Today, we finally get to meet the new student. Please note that I'll be referring to him as Masked Marth so we don't get confused on which Marth is which. Also we'll be introduced to female bullies, seeing how we haven't ran into any of those yet.

I'd also like to address that I've made a DeviantART account recently, which I put on my profile if you want to check it out. I'll be posting the story there as well along with fan art of it drawn by yours truly. I'll also be posting fan art based on other fics I enjoy reading here as well, so if you're interested, stay tuned for that.

I realized I forgot to address this for character deaths, but no main characters/characters important to to die. That doesn't mean they can get fatally injured though!

Anyways, I hope you enjoy this chapter!

Characters Who Aren't in Smash Brothers
Chrom(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Lissa(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Masked Marth(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Krystal(Starfox Adventures)
L'Arachel(Fire Emblem Sacred Stones)
Innes(Fire Emblem Sacred Stones)
Eirika(Fire Emblem Sacred Stones)
Olivia(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Henry(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Soren(Fire Emblem 9/10)

As the morning sun peered into the guest room, Marth realized that today was the day he was going to ask Samus out. Getting up, the bluenet moaned as he hoped his decision is a wise choice. At least he'll be going home today after school, knowing that Elice is going to be back from her trip. The bluenet grabbed his uniform along with a clean pair of underwear, boxers, socks and made his way to take a shower. Murmurs can be heard not far from here, seeing that his cousins happened to be awake as well.

Marth stepped inside the shower, turning it on as he let the warm, soothing water do its work. He'd clean himself as he washed and rinsed his hair. After he finished, the bluenet stepped out and dried his hair with a towel. He started to multitask brushing his teeth and getting changed, his mouth clutching onto the toothbrush as he put on his clothes. Once he finished, he took out Elice's blow dryer that he borrowed and styled his hair. Last but not least, the boy placed the Lowell family's most treasured value on his head.

Admiring himself in the mirror, Marth couldn't help but grin. He'd get out of the bathroom, heading back to the guestroom and began packing his stuff. Eventually, Marth heard Chrom calling for him, which made the boy rush out, knowing that he could finish packing when he gets back. Before leaving the room, he grabbed his book bag and left.

Heading into the kitchen, the bluenet saw Chrom with a piece of toast in his mouth while Lissa was all ready to go. The blonde girl had her arms crossed, giving off an annoyed look to her older brother as he muttered for them to get into the car.

Marth and Lissa got in the car as Chrom hopped in, munching on said toast as he started up the vehicle. The older bluenet quickly backed out without looking, before speeding on. The two teenagers gripped on their seats, hanging onto their lives as the older teen sped like a maniac. As they approached a changing light, Chrom decided to make a swift right turn as the car almost tipped over.

"CHROM!" complained Lissa. "Are you trying to get us killed or something?!"

"I'm just doing what I can to get you two to school," he replied. Marth sighed as he looked out the window. He figured one of these days his cousin was going to get a speeding ticket and lectured for his reckless driving.

The blonde girl pouted, not taking her brother's poor excuse of an answer. "That doesn't mean drive like a maniac! If you

get pulled over, you know you're going to be in hot water with Frederick!"

Sighing, Chrom listened to her. He figured it wasn't worth arguing something petty as his driving. Besides, he already had to hear the same argument almost every morning.

Arriving at the school grounds, Chrom dropped off the two and drove off to get to the university. Marth watched him go, taking a deep breath. Looking around, he noticed that Lissa already disappeared from his sight. Figuring that his cousin went to hang out with her friends, the bluenet decided to go look for Samus.

Opening the main door, Marth stepped inside the building as he began to scope the area. He saw Roy engaged in a conversation with Wolt. As the two made eye contact, the redhead glared at him, muttering something to the greenet before the two walked away.

"*Seriously, what's his problem? I mean, I just missed one lousy birthday party, geez. Roy really needs to grow up, and besides, not everyone's obligated to go to every event you host ever anyways,"* thought the bluenet. Sighing to himself, Marth proceeded on with his morning. He eventually found the blonde tomboy who seemed to be talking to Ike. Soren stood by the taller bluenet, having a blank expression on his face.

Gulping, the teen himself almost chickened out but decided against it. Approaching the trio, Marth strutted over with confidence. The three looked at him, Ike raising a brow while Soren's face expression stayed the same. The blonde turned around, greeting the bluenet.

"Hey Samus? I was wondering….." Marth began to fiddle around with his fingers, trying to think of the best way to word asking her out. He felt pressured that Ike and Soren happened to be watching him as well, but knew he had to get to her first before someone else did.

"Yeah Marth?" she responded, awaiting his question.

"Um, I really like you as in like-like you. So, I was wondering, would you like to go out with me?!"

Marth began beating himself up in his head, calling himself an array of names from doofus to even idiot. He felt that she was going to reject him, seeing as it was taking her longer than usual to answer the question. Samus' face expression was blank for a moment but after a minute passed, she smiled.

"I was waiting for the day you'd ask that Marth! I'd love to go out with you," she exclaimed.

The bluenet's face turned red as he was screaming internally. He finally obtained his first girlfriend and even better, it happened to be the gorgeous yet spunky Samus Aran! If no one was around, he would have been dancing for joy. The adolescent couldn't help but grin wide as the blonde kissed him on the cheek.

"See you in class, prince."

Samus walked off as Marth stared. He followed the same direction, figuring he should go look for Link or something to tell him the good news. *"She even gave me a pet name! Wow, I am good!"*

The two boys watched the other two leave. Ike grimaced a bit as Soren noticed the indigo haired boy's face expression changed.

"Is something wrong Ike?" asked the black haired boy.

"..It's nothing. Don't worry about it alright?" he answered, ruffling Soren's hair. The smaller boy winced, telling Ike never to do that again. He knew Ike was flat out lying, he could tell.

"Let me guess, you like her, don't you?"

While Marth explored the school, he heard a group of girls' conversing with one another. The bluenet couldn't help but ease drop, wondering what they were even discussing.

"Hey Daisy, did you hear?! There's a new kid at school!" piped L'Arachel.

"Oh really now?" Daisy perked her head, looking interested. The other girl nodded in unison with her friends.

"Yeah! It's a boy and he's really cute!" exclaimed Jigglypuff.

"Not as cute as Sonic though," said Amy, barging in. The girls looked at her and sighed.

"Are you still trying to get Sonic to go out with you?! You know it's not going to work," said Krystal. Amy shook her head, not buying any of the other cheerleaders' words.

"A girl can try, right?" said the pink hedgehog.

L'Arachel waited for them to be done with their side conversation before continuing on. "Well anyways, he looks so mysterious it's almost dreamy!" The cheerleaders sighed, fantasizing themselves hanging out with the new student.

As the group of cheerleaders continued yapping about the new kid to Daisy, Innes happened to be passing by. Hearing the group of girls sigh softly, the ash haired boy shook his head and rolled his eyes.

"What are you girls getting so riled up about this time?" he asked.

"Well Innes, for your information, us girls just happen to spot a new kid!" replied Jigglypuff.

"And best of all, he happens to be hot!" added L'Arachel.

Innes raised a brow, looking puzzled. Shaking his head, he sighed as the cheerleaders squealed. *"Why do I even bother to attend a public school? I just should have stayed with a private tutor then again, Ephraim's here so that at least makes it a bit fun."*

"Don't you girls have something better to do than to waste time boasting about someone you haven't even met?" he responded. The cheerleaders frowned as the blonde moved closer to him.

"No need to be such a killjoy Innes. Can't us girls have our fun?!" stated L'Arachel. She crossed her arms, giving him a look. The teen shook his head once again.

"You guys find any boy cute," he pointed out.

"Nu-Uh! That's not true," barked Krystal. "Some guys are really ugly here, we just talk about the cute ones okay?"

Innes just gave the girls a look before heading off. L'Arachel followed him, chatting away in his ear. The bluenet wondered who the new student was as he left to go look for the Hylian.

The remaining cheerleaders decided to change the subject seeing how it was useless to talk about the new guy now that L'Arachel left.

"Anyways," said Daisy. "How was your guys' weekend?"

"It was great! Got to go to the beach and play volleyball," answered Krystal.

"Well, I was just working on my tan is all," exclaimed the Pokémon. The girls laughed before jumping onto a different subject, one which happened to be rude.

"Oh my god, Daisy you'd never believe who I saw at the mall yesterday," remarked the blue fox.

"Oh my god, who?!"

Exchanging looks, the anthropomorphic creature smirked. "I saw you know who shopping with her mother," she belted. The three girls bursted out laughing, finding what the blue fox said hilarious.

"I can't believe she goes shopping with her mom, like ugh seriously. What a pathetic princess I swear," added Jigglypuff.

"Maybe she's afraid that people might… stare at her," chuckled the brunette. "God she's so pathetic I swear. Like, I have Algebra II and Intermediate Theatre with her and she actually think's I'm her friend. She's so stupid I swear. I talk shit about her all the time in theatre class and she doesn't even notice!"

"Wow, she is stupid."

"Psst, guys here she comes," whispered Jigglypuff. The three girls quickly shifted topics, once again talking about their weekend.

Olivia walked by, not noticing that Jigglypuff extended her foot. The pink haired girl tripped, dropping all of her books on the floor.

"Oh no…" she mumbled. The girl began to gather up her books quickly before hurrying off. Olivia didn't bother to see who even saw her. To her, it was better not to see who or what was there seeing how she easily gets flustered. As the pink haired girl disappeared from their sight, the other three snickered.

"Oh my god, she didn't even notice. She really is stupid," laughed Jigglypuff. As Daisy was about to say something, the school bell rung. It was time to head to class as the girls parted ways before leaving. The brunette sprinted through the hallways and barely made it in time for her History class. She'd quickly take a seat, taking out her belongings as she got ready to start on the bell work.

Five minutes into class, the door opened as all the students looked up. A bluenet entered the classroom as they held a schedule in their hands. The boy happened to be really slender as they wore a mask on their face, hiding the rest of their features beneath it. They approached Snake, showing him their schedule. The older man glanced at it for a moment before getting up.

"Class, it looks like we have a new student today. Say hello to Marth Aritia. He just transferred all the way from the other side of the world."

Marth seemed surprised. He never knew that someone else could bear the same name as him until now. In fact, he found it quite strange. The boy shrugged it off, wondering if his parents also happened to like the prince as well.

"*I wonder if this was the guy L'Arachel was talking about. If it is, he's really cute,"* thought Daisy.

Snake told the new student to sit next to Samus, which happened to make Marth a bit jealous. What made it worse was the fact that the teacher told Samus to help the new student catch up with the rest of the class. Looking away, he frowned, not liking them one bit.

"Okay class, today's going to be a real easy day. We're going to be watching a documentary about the Hero King himself to refresh your mind for Unit 1's test this upcoming Friday. Even if this is review, I'll still like you guys to take notes as some of the questions on the test will be based off the movie," inquired Snake. He'd began to play the film, grabbing everyone's attention as it started.

Marth couldn't help but trail off on his own thoughts. *"I hope that Marth doesn't try to get too close to Samus. He's already getting help from her and it doesn't even help that we have almost the same build, except he has a smaller frame. To be honest, it's kind of spooky how he almost exactly looks like me, almost as if they've been stalking me."*

Instead of focusing on the movie, the bluenet couldn't help but constantly look at masked individual. He observed him, trying to see if he was going to try anything on his girlfriend. Eventually as class ended, the new kid stormed out before he could have a word. Samus walked out with him as they held hands for a spilt second.

"Hey, I was wondering um, afterschool would you like to hang out at the mall or something?" asked her boyfriend.

Thinking for a moment, the blonde declined. "As much as I'd love to, I promised Marth to catch him up in the library afterschool. Maybe we can hang out some other time. Besides, see you in third period." She'd walk away as Marth watched her. Part of him felt disappointed while the other part felt angry. His biggest fear at the moment was what if she fell for the other Marth instead. The boy sighed as Kirby placed his hand on him.

"So, I was correct. You did love Samus after all," teased the puffball. Luigi chuckled a little at Kirby's response as Marth's face turned red.

"Yeah, I'm worried though."

Marth's face dropped down as his friends noticed this. One thing that the bluenet was glad about was the fact they didn't bring up Roy's birthday.

"Hmm," said Luigi. "Let me-a guess, it's the other Marth right?"

The bluenet nodded in response. "I'm just freaking out that Samus might try to go for him instead? It hasn't even been an hour we've been going out and all this sudden this jerk has to get in the picture!"

Nodding, Luigi replied "I see. I wouldn't-a fret about it if I were-a you. She likes you after all so why would she go after-a someone she just-a met?"

"Well," piped in Kirby. "The new kid looks like an exact replica of Marth and-"Before he could finished, he was cut off by Luigi. The two parted ways, wishing their friend the best of luck. The bluenet sighed as he started to proceed on.

As he went down the hallway, he noticed Caeda from far away. She happened to be talking with another girl until she accidently tripped, dropping her belongings on the floor. However, before Marth could do anything to help her he saw the new kid tending to her.

The masked individual helped the bluenette up, even picking up her books and handing it to her. After that, he knelt down, gently grabbing her hand and kissed it.

"Are you alright milady?" he said, asking. His voice sounded very calm and collective, even if it did sound a bit feminine.

"Y-yeah," she answered quickly. "T-thank you very much."

Marth clutched his fists, watching Caeda talk with Masked Marth. Part of him didn't care at all, but was he feeling a bit…. jealous? Looking away, Marth told himself repeatedly that he loved Samus and Caeda was only a childhood friend. He'd head over to his math class, meeting up with Link.

To spite the bluenet, it turned out that Masked Marth happened to be in his Pre-Calc class. Link observed the individual, finding something oddly familiar about them. The Hylian couldn't place his hand on it, but he felt like he knew the new kid from somewhere else. Math class flew by quickly as it ended. The bluenet got up, knowing that he had to face Roy in PE which made him a bit uneasy.

He'd enter the locker room and change his clothes. Afterwards, he'd stuff them in his locker and quickly leave before the redhead could step foot into the room. Entering the gymnasium, he noticed Red with his sketchbook along with the silver haired boy next to him.

More students came into the classroom, the football players actually greeting him. Roy shot a death glare in his direction, shaking his head in disgust.

Samus entered the gymnasium, sitting next to Marth. "Hey babe, sup?"

"Nothing much, just wondering what we're going to do today in class, that's all. " The two began to snuggle a bit, Marth feeling a bit warm.

Lucario entered the gymnasium, showing Masked Marth the way. He'd introduce him to the students before sending the boy to get changed. Henry was interested, especially now since there were two Marths he could befriend now.

"One Marth, two Marth, three Marth, four Marth!" he sang. Laughing, he turned his head to Red. "Wow, that's so cool! Imagine if there was another me running around at the school."

Red winced, trying not to laugh. "I think one Henry's all we need." He knew if there was anymore, the school would probably be in total chaos. A bunch of blood would fill up the hallways along with dead crows and even animals would roam wildly around the school.

As Masked Marth returned, he greeted the students. "Hello, as you may know the name's Marth. I hope to make strong bonds with each and every one of you throughout the year."

Lucario had the students doing their usual warm ups before moving on. He'd press a button, transforming a gymnasium into what looked like an obstacle course. Clearing his throat, the Pokémon spoke.

"Alright class, today's agenda is Race to the Finish. Everyone will be participating in this activity. You must dodge a number of obstacles as well, so this will not be easy. Whoever gets to the finish first wins got it? Alright, on your mark, get set, GO!"

The class begins running, dodging the strange obstacles that came in their way. Marth was doing pretty good, even exceeding some of the football players. Samus and Ike happened to be neck-to-neck with each other for first place. Little did they know, Masked Marth outran them, getting to the finish line.

"AND WE HAVE A WINNER!" shouted the machine. The gym transformed back into its original form. Lucario congratulated Masked Marth as the students clapped in the background. Afterwards, he'd dismiss them to get changed before the lunch period started.

Marth began to get changed, seeing the new student pass by him.

"Good job! I've noticed we happen to have the same classes so far. I hope we can become the best of friends," he said. The bluenet just glared at him in response.

"Like I'd want to be friends with you," hissed Marth. The bluenet stormed out of the locker room, leaving the boy alone with Roy and Wolt.

"Don't listen to him," said the red head. "He's just being a primadonna. Anyways, the name's Roy and my friend here's Wolt. You run really fast, heck you even bet two of the top tier kids in sports!"

Smiling, the bluenet thanked him.

Marth headed into the lunchroom. Caeda approached him, greeting the bluenet.

"Marth! Where were you this morning?! I was getting worried," exclaimed Caeda.

"I was still at my cousins house, so I dropped off by them." Before she could reply, Samus came up behind him and held his hand.

"Hey Marth, want to join me and my friends for lunch? We could spend our first quality time as boyfriend and girlfriend there."

"Sure!" The two walked off as Caeda watched them. Pouting, she turned away and headed back to the usual table.

At Ike's table, Marth would be greeted by Eirika as the others exchanged glances with one another. Mario recognized the boy to be Luigi's friend as Ike's eyes narrowed.

"Hey, I was wondering if my boyfriend can join us for lunch?" asked the blonde.

"Fine with-a me, right guys?" The group nodded in unison, as Ike muttered something.

Looking in their direction in the lunch line, Zelda sighed of relief. She was glad that Samus was going out with someone else which gave her a better chance of asking Ike out. The Hylian brunette noticed Link behind her, greeting him.

"Hey Link! How was your weekend?" she asked.

'*It was great. Just did some relaxing and explored town more,'* he answered.

"Say do you have a cellphone by any chance?"

'*Yeah, why?'*

Zelda handed him her phone number, telling him to text her. Link grinned, as they got their meals and parted ways with each other. Luckily Groose wasn't here today so the Hylian had it easy. Lunch went smoothly for the most part, besides Soren and Boyd feeling the tension between Ike and Marth. Eventually lunch period ended as everyone parted ways. Samus kissed Marth on the lips this time before leaving, causing Ike to clench his fists.

Before heading into Anatomy class, Marth managed to catch Link. "Hey Link, I was wondering if you want to go to the mall afterschool or something?"

'*Sure, I have nothing to do so why not.'*

"Great! See you then!" Marth stormed into the classroom before the final bell rang to indicate that he was tardy.

It turns out for the remainder of the school year, Masked Marth was going to be in all of his classes. The bluenet groaned under his breath, wondering why fate had to do this to him. It didn't help that the boy got off to a better start than he did, actually being admired by his peers. The bluenet couldn't help but be jealous, even if the individual wanted to become his friend. Eventually the school day ended as he stormed out of the classroom before the masked individual could talk to him.

The two boys headed into the mall afterschool. Marth was glad that Link accepted to hang out with him. He needed a distraction, especially after that new kid. The bluenet himself didn't even want to know what was happening in the library right now. The teenagers made their way into the food court to pick themselves up a meal before proceeding on. They both decided to order at McDedede's, Link getting a big D while Marth got himself a chicken wrap. After getting their order, the boy's found a place to sit and plopped themselves down on the chair.

"Hey Link, what do you think of the new kid… Marth?" he asked. It felt weird saying his own name, especially to refer to someone else.

Link took a moment to think before responding. He'd bit into his burger, and then answered *'I think he's pretty interesting. Why did you ask?'*

"Well, I just wanted to know. Part of me finds it strange that Marth also happens to look almost like an exact copy of me. I mean, it's really spooky in a sense just thinking about it. I know my parents didn't give birth to a twin and gah, it's all too confusing!"

'*Now that you'd mention it, I do find it rather strange myself. Maybe that's why his parents named him after the prince of Altea, possibly because he bore looks similar to him as well? It is a small world after all…*'

"True…" Marth sighed. He figured that learning about the new kid would be hopeless. The boy figured that maybe he should try to attempt to be his friend or something.

The three cheerleaders walked out of Popister with a bunch of new clothes. They'd head into the bathroom to freshen up their makeup.

"I told you the new kid was cute, didn't I?" stated Krystal.

"Uh duh! Believe it or not, his name's Marth and he's in my history class," shouted Daisy. The three squealed as they sighed all dreamy.

"Wait, his name's Marth? Don't tell me he's gross looking like that loser Lowell," said Jigglypuff, butting in.

"Actually about Lowell, he's actually gotten kind of hot now. Finally did something with his hair and lost those hideous glasses of his," responded Daisy.

"Oh really now? I guess I don't pay much attention to him," said the Pokémon.

"Say, I've heard he's going out with Samus. They make like, a really cute couple," told the blue fox. "I wonder how long they're going to last together?"

"Who knows? Anyways," said Daisy. "Homecoming's coming up in a couple of weeks. I wonder who's going to win King and Queen this year for the junior class. My bet goes to Ike and Zelda!"

"Me too!"

Smirking, Krystal just got an idea. "Hey girls, you know how we vote based on a ballot to see who goes on the nominees list? Well, I was thinking what if we rigged one of the nominees to be Olivia? That'd be so funny."

"Oh my god, it totally would!" exclaimed Jigglypuff. "She'd be all 'I'm so embarrassed stop staring at me.' "she added in a mocking tone.

The three laughed out loud, liking the blue fox's plan.

"Anyways, during the night of the Homecoming dance were all nominees are called to the stage, little does she know that a red paint bucket's going to splatter all over her! She'd be so embarrassed, the girl will practically run home crying!"

The girls laughed at their sinister plan. They had to keep it in the down low, just in case their cheer captain ever hears of this.

Meanwhile, Henry seemed to be hanging around the mall as well with another girl. She had long, black hair, looking uninterested and rather bored. The two browsed the stores, window shopping.

"I can't believe I actually agreed to this..." spoke the girl. She sounded bored, wishing that she could be somewhere else. The black haired girl wasn't fond of big crowds, even if it meant finding new victims to practice her hexes on them.

"Hey Tharja, look! Look!" exclaimed the silveret all excited.

Turning her head, Tharja noticed that Henry was wearing a chicken hat on his head, his hands in the long sleeves as he flapped around.

"Aren't I BAWK-tastic?"

"Sure, whatever," replied the girl. Sighing, she realized maybe she had hope of seeing him in the mall. Unlike Henry,

Tharja happened to be homeschooled in the orphanage. When she wasn't studying, she spent her time stalking a cute guy at the university even going as far to snip locks of his hair when he fell asleep under the tree.

The two continued browsing. Eventually they passed a jewelry store as Tharja stopped for a minute. A ring happened to catch her eye. It had a purple gemstone engraved, sitting on the finest silver she's ever seen. Henry peeked to see what caught his friend's interest.

"Hey Henry? Do you think that ring will look good on me?" she asked.

"Definitely. It'd be the ring of a lifetime!"

"Maybe you should, you know, get it for me?"

"Okay! Can do!" Laughing, Henry entered the jewelry store. The shop owner happened to be on break as the store was empty. Looking around, Henry grabbed the ring and went out the store.

"Here!"

"Not right here! Now, let's get out of here."

The two stormed out of the mall, getting away with shoplifting. Tharja couldn't believe Henry actually stole the ring, no she didn't even think he'd do such a thing. She only said it as a joke but alas, was happy to obtain the object.

The store owner returned from break, just to almost faint at the sight of their store.

"The ring… it's been stolen! That's worth five thousand dollars!" Panicking, they rushed over to the security camera to see who did it. Sadly, it was disabled so they never got the culprit. Picking up the phone, they called the police.

"It's an emergency! Send Chief Resetti over right away, please!"

Oh boy, out of all people you wouldn't expect Henry to openly shoplift and take his friend's words seriously, now did you?

Anyways, instead of having a poll, I'm just going to ask you guys to place this in your review. What chapter do you think Homecoming should be on?

Story Questions

1. Do you think Masked Marth will get popular as well?

2. Which kind of bullies do you think are worse? Male or Female ones?

3. Do you think Henry will eventually be caught? If yes, what do you think will happen. If no, why.

4. What would you like to see in Chapter 17?

Remember, I'm always open to suggestions too! I run on those to have these chapters come up faster, plus it helps me get a direction on where the story's going.

See you in Chapter 17!

Chapter 18: Jealousy

Wow, I'm surprised I was able to come up with this so quickly. I really must thank all who answered the questions, especially number four.

I think for now on, I might ask a question like that seeing how it really helped me so I thank you for that.

Fun part is, I was able to upload this in time for Marth's and Lucina's birthday hehe.

Now in today's chapter we get to see Ike's jealousy kick in along with learning more about Homecoming! Also we get to see a little more of Olivia as well.

Characters that aren't in SSB
Henry(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Eirika(Fire Emblem Sacred Stones)
Gaius(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Frederick(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Malon(Legend of Zelda: Ocarina of Time

The next morning, Marth woke up to the sound of the TV downstairs. Getting up, the bluenet placed his glasses on his face and made his way out of the bedroom. He'd walk downstairs, wondering what was even going on. He came to the sight of Elice looking horrified while watching the news. Being curious to know what was going on, he made his way towards the living room and sat down on the sofa.

"Good morning Brawlville. This is Lyndis Caelin with the incoming news. For those who don't know, yesterday afternoon in Brawlville Fashion Square district, someone shoplifted a five thousand dollar ring at Subspace Jeweler's. I am right here on the scene to interview the store's owner, Mr. Toadsworth."

The camera would motion over to the toad as he looked extremely overwhelmed from what was going on right now. Lyn moved towards the man, kneeling down to get to his height as she lowered the microphone as well.

"Good morning Mr. Toadsworth, I see you're still aren't coping well with the loss of the valuable item?" she inquired.

"I'm afraid so. What I want to know is who would even bother to step in and steal a ring so valuable. That ring is one of a kind and it was on hold for a special customer!" he stammered.

"I see," replied the greenette. She paused for a moment. "Do you have any clue on whom or what did it?" she asked.

The toad shook his head, sighing. "I'm afraid not. Whoever did it disabled the cameras before going in. When we got the camera's working again, the entire footage was missing!" He began to hyperventilate, shaking as he began to overthink about the situation once again.

Lyn moved to a different spot in the mall, the cameras shifting towards her. Standing up, she held the mike to her once again.

"Moving on, we also have the chief of police Mr. Resetti with us here as well. So Mr. Resetti, do you have any clue that who could have possibly done this?" inquired Lyn.

"Well…" The mole took a minute to think about his answer. "From the looks of it, we're going to have to say it's some punk kid. As we were gathering up information yesterday, it turns out a lot of students that attend Burazazu High School frequent this mall."

Nodding, Lyn asked him another question. "So, you're expecting that the suspect perhaps attends Burazazu am I correct?"

"Yes you are. Today's agenda is that the Brawlville police force will be going to the school and interviewing possible suspects."

"That sounds like an effective method. I wish you and the police department the best of luck. Now back to you Mary Toad."

The camera's stopped rolling as Lyndis and the camera man left, leaving the police officers back to doing their job. While Resetti had a mindset of what type of students did it, another officer thought otherwise. Frederick moved closely towards

the camera, inspecting something. His brow rose as he found some new overlooked evidence that really narrowed down their culprit. The brunette decided to keep it to himself, knowing that his boss was already stubborn as it is.

Marth looked to his sister as she smiled softly at him. He wondered who could have even done such a thing, even if shoplifting sometimes made a person cool. The bluenet got off the couch, and headed back upstairs to get ready for the school day. Perhaps today was the day he'd actually go out with Samus somewhere, after Kendo club of course.

Meanwhile at a different residence, Olivia was getting herself ready for the day. The pink haired girl grabbed her book bag and left her room to head over to the kitchen. As she entered, her mother left the young lady a note on the refrigerator. Grabbing it, Olivia started reading the note as she smiled a little.

Olivia, breakfast is inside the fridge. I wish you the best of luck and I love you. Remember to do your best at school and don't let the littlest things put you down. Also good luck at your first club meeting!

Love you lots!

Xoxo Mom

Nodding in response, Olivia placed the note on the side of the kitchen counter and opened the fridge. She grabbed the parfait her mother made her for breakfast as she begins digging in. The girl sighed, hoping that the school day will go by fast, seeing how she easily gets anxious around other people. After she finished her meal, the pink haired girl left her house and began to walk over to the bus stop. Grabbing her mp3 player from the book bag, she placed the ear buds in and began playing her music.

She'd stare down at her mp3 player to make it look like she was occupied as the other students came by. A few minutes later, the bus arrived as it stopped to let the kids get on. Olivia quickly got on the bus, taking one of the front window seats. The bus started to drive off to the school as she looked out the window. Voices can be heard as students conversed with one another. She tried to not pay attention but she couldn't resist what they're talking about. Sadly, she thought every conversation that was about a girl happened to be about her, which made her mornings always uneasy.

Arriving at the school, the bus dropped off the teens as they got off, parting ways to hang out with their friends. Olivia decided to look around the school gardens before heading inside. She loved the array of flowers that were planted along with the decorations. To her, it reminded her of the old place she used to live in back when her father was still alive. Staring off into space, she let her trail of thoughts loose as she began dancing, getting lost in the tranquility of the school gardens. Letting her worries go away, it didn't last for long as she couldn't help but hear someone's voice from far away.

"… Aw, it looks like this poor little doggy's hurt. From the looks of it, the mutt must've got its foot stuck in the branch and hurt its leg."

Looking over, she noticed the strange kid that everyone always seemed to talk about in school. Getting worried for the poor animal, she quickly dashed over and pushed him away from the dog.

"DON'T YOU TOUCH THAT DOG!" shouted the girl.

Henry just looked over to her and tilted his head in a cute fashion. "Huh? Why'd you do that for?" he asked, not quite understanding Olivia's actions.

Trying not to tremble, she looked the silver haired boy straight in the eyes. "I know who you are! You're that creepy kid that who likes blood and magic… and even blood magic! I've heard all about you around the school," she exclaimed. Taking a breather, Olivia added "Now you stay away from that poor animal."

Sighing, Henry moved closer towards the dog and knelt down. His smiled dropped a bit as he squinted his eyes even harder. He happened to look annoyed, but tried his best to keep his charade going. "But this dog's hurt. If you look at its leg, you'd see-"

Before he could finish, Olivia cut him off once again. "N-no! Stop! I'll take care of him and nurse him back to health!"

The boy stared at her for a moment, before he laughed. He replied "Huh? Oh, okay, sure! We can take care of him together!"

Olivia looked uncertain about this. She didn't trust him one bit, especially hearing all about him around the school. The students proclaimed many things about him. Rumors had it that Henry tended to be extremely creepy, even to the point where he killed things for fun. She recalled last year's event at the library, hearing that he was the cause of the whole mess. Another rumor has it that he even killed his entire family just for his own pleasure.

"T-together?!" she piped out. "Waaait a second."

Looking at him, her tone changed into a confused one. " Aren't you going to sacrifice him to your dark god or something?"

Chuckling at her response, he couldn't help but grin. "Why would I do something like that?! I love animals! From doggies to kitties, you name it!"

Shaking his head, he found her to be hilarious. "I want to save his life," he said, informing her. His gaze moved from the dancer to the dog as he began to gently pet it. "Right boy? Who's a good boy?" Henry continued talking to the dog in a cutesy voice. It sounded weird to hear his tone like that, which made Olivia wince a bit but at least he wasn't going to kill it.

"Aren't you glad the crazy lady wants to help us? Yes, you are!"

Olivia's face tinted red from embarrassment. Defending herself, she barked back at Henry. "Hey!" she exclaimed. "How am I crazy? You're the one who's obsessed with blood!"

Feeling slightly offended, Henry stated that it was a medical condition. The girl wasn't buying any of his excuses, knowing that there was no such thing. Sighing, she replied "Oh, never mind. Right now, we have a dog that needs looking after. Will you run and get me some bandages please?"

Nodding, Henry chirped "You got it, crazy lady! Oh, by the way the name's Henry but I'm sure you already knew that, seeing how you're crazy and all."

He'd storm off into the school and head over to the nurses office. Olivia watched him leave, looking down to the poor dog. One thing she noticed about him was that his smile was completely fake. Due to being an actress herself, she learned how to tell a fake smile from a real one. Deep down, she could tell that his cheerful demeanor was just a mask used to hide his pain. Sighing to herself, she wondered what she even got herself into.

Masked Marth entered the school grounds and decided to explore the front yard for a bit. He admired the way it was structured, almost reminding him of the forest near his house. The sounds of leaves ruffling could be heard, which caused the bluenet to look up. He noticed a dark browned hair boy up on the tree, grinning as there wasn't anything wrong with the world.

The boy noticed the bluenet and smiled. "Care to join me?" he asked him. "The breeze is lovely up here and so is the view."

The bluenet couldn't help but ponder about something. This boy reminded him of someone, but whom? He declined the boy's offer, as the teen himself decided to lunge down. His smile still remained as he held out his hand.

"It's a pleasure to meet you, the name's Morgan."

"*Morgan? Where did I hear that name before…?"* The masked individual began recalling his friend in the back of his head, the one he just left. It was strange how this young boy reminded him so much of her. The boy even found it more strange that they happened to share the same name. He began to wonder if he loved playing around with his mother as well.

Masked Marth extended his hand out, shaking the other boy's. "You can call me Marth."

"Marth you say?" Another smile formed on his face as he looked really happy. "That's a pretty cool name! Say, I haven't seen any guys like you around these parts before. Are you new to the city?" he asked.

Nodding, he answered. "Yes. I just moved in on Saturday."

"That's cool!" Morgan was curious about this Marth fellow now. "Say Marth, I just recently moved here too! I've started last week at the school though. What grade level are you anyways, I'm a sophomore!"

"Junior…"

Morgan nodded, finding him to be the coolest thing ever. "That's neat! Say, I got to start heading to class. Talk to you later!" He waved before leaving. The bluenet walked in his direction to get to history class.

"*Strange… I haven't even been here for a week and Morgan seems unusually optimistic, which isn't a bad thing. He's so different from the other students around here. All the others are wrapped up in their own selfish desires while he seems*

really… pure. Part of me is envious of his attitude. Perhaps he can give me some lessons on how to relax some time."

The first two classes went by pretty smoothly. On the announcements, they've announced that the school was getting a visit from the Brawlville police force. The person on the overhead started to explain the situation that happened yesterday filling in some of the students who didn't see the news. They also announced a major assembly during third period, which made some of the students happy. Marth hoped the day went by fast so he can get Kendo club over with. As the first period ended, he ran over to Samus.

"Samus wait!"

Stopping in her tracks, she turned around. "What is it babe?"

"Can we possibly go out tonight? Just you and me?!" he asked.

"Of course! Meet me outside after school when I'm finished with track alright?!"

As she left, Marth danced around a bit being excited for their first date. Little did he know, Ike happed to be watching them as he growled.

During third hour instead of going to PE class, everyone was required to go into the auditorium. Marth and Link walked side by side with each other. Masked Marth decided to join them as well, making the bluenet himself a bit ticked. His biggest fear was that this Marth would eventually replace him in everything, leaving him back to square one. He hated how he tried to be friends with him as well, especially since he knew he was going out with Samus.

The boys entered the auditorium and took a seat next to one another. The rows ended up getting filled very quickly to fit the entire school. Masked Marth looked over to Link, smiling a bit.

"Do you have any idea on what this sudden assembly is all about?" he asked.

Shaking his head, Link shrugged. Marth grimaced before looking back to the stage. He crossed his arms, wanting no part of him or his annoying questions. Thinking about it, the bluenet figured he'd rather take Henry any day over this individual.

The Hylian couldn't help but wonder where he had heard Masked Marth's voice before. It sounded vaguely familiar to him, but he couldn't quite pick it up. Everyone paid attention to the stage as their principal made his way.

Mr. Hand took the stage, holding a microphone to his mouth.

"Attention everyone, I'm sure you all are wondering why I called you all down here today. First of all, I just want to inform you guys that the police are here going in from classroom to classroom to find a culprit who stolen some ring. Anyways, that's not the reason why you're here!"

He'd pull down the curtain as confetti fell from the sky. Clearing his throat, the man spoke once again.

"I'm here to address that Homecoming's coming up in about two months from today! So, we're going to start accepting nominees for all of the classes. These nominees will be announced during the prep rally a month from now. That way, it gives you students the time to vote and choose wisely."

The students cheered, being excited for Homecoming and the game itself. The principal addressed more things, going over the rules and the dress code as well. Eventually the assembly ended as he dismissed all the students as they headed into their lunch break.

Marth walked into the cafeteria with Samus, parting ways with Link. They'd sit at the table being joined by the twins who usually brought their own lunches. Soon the others arrived to join them. The two lovebirds begin snuggling, making Ike break his fork with his own hand.

Soren and Boyd noticed this as the indigo haired boy went to get another one. Soren got up to follow him, knowing the exact reason of what was bothering him. He decided to freshen up in the men's restroom before heading back.

He'd turn on the sink, letting the water run as he begin to wet his face. Soren stood from a distance, watching him.

"Let me guess, you can't stand to see those two together like that, can you."

Sighing, Ike turned to his friend. "I'm trying to resist the urge not to snap his neck in half," he hissed.

The black haired youth sighed, shaking his head. He never understood why people get so riled up over love then again, he never felt those feelings for anyone. Instead, he just continued to let his friend rant to him.

"I know he's just dating her to piss me off! He knew that I liked her from the start and look what he does!" Ike punched a wall in anger, taking a deep breath afterwards. The bluenet began to realize that he was actually starting to dislike Marth more and more.

Meanwhile, Zelda requested for Link to join her outside the courtyard for lunch. The Hylian nodded, following the young socialite. They managed to find a place under the shade as they sat down and opened up their lunches.

"Hey Link, isn't this lovely?" she asked, smiling. Link couldn't resist how cute Zelda looked today, especially since he's beginning to grow quite fond of her.

The Hylian boy nodded in response. They'd observe the other students who eat outside as well, watching them off in their own little worlds.

'*So, what exactly is homecoming?'* he asked. Link wasn't sure about it since this was his first year in a public school.

"Well," explained the brunette. "Homecoming's the first semiformal dance of the year. It's for every grade level to attend. It's also a dance for the previous graduating class to come back and dance again, hence its name. Before the dance, we usually have a home football game and a spirit week to get hyped up. It's really fun!"

'*That's cool! I can't wait to see who gets nominated!'*

"Me too! I wonder if I'll get nominated and win again! That'd be something!"

'*You were nominated before?!'*

Nodding, Zelda smiled. "Mmhmm, to be honest I was quite surprised. Maybe this year I might win once again and finally get to confess my feelings to him."

Link nodded. He wondered who she meant by him though. Part of him hoped it was to him but another part knew she had her heart set on someone else.

After lunch, Marth parted ways with his girlfriend. He was quite excited for their first date after school, especially since he finally gets to have some alone time with her. The bluenet couldn't help but notice that Ike's been slightly getting more aggressive with him. He paid no heed to it, thinking that maybe the Kendo captain was having a bad day.

He'd enter the classroom and greet Mr. Olimar as he turned in last night's homework. The bluenet took his seat next to Henry as the silver haired boy happened to be drawing something. Peeking over to see what it was, it was a badly drawn manga version of him and Masked Marth making out. Oh the side, he'd saw Henry in the picture as well, saying "Now that's what I CAW… hotter than elfire."

Henry turned to notice Marth looking. Grinning, he laughed before saying something.

"Do you like it Marth?" he asked.

"Yeeeeah, about that…" Before Marth could finish, he was cut off by giggling once again. Frowning a bit, the bluenet sighed. One thing he wished was for the school year to end already so he didn't have to deal with Henry. He didn't know how much longer he could stand to hear his terrible puns and whatnot, seeing how only one week has passed.

"Hey Marth, let's go down under and hang out after school. Just you and me, so what do you say?"

"Sorry, but I have to decline. I'm going out on a date tonight with Samus plus I have Kendo practice after school," he answered. Even if he didn't have those activities, Marth would have still found a way to get out of it. He felt that Henry would only drag his growing image down, especially knowing that he's already creepy as hell.

"Aww," whined the silveret. "How about tomorrow then?! We can meet after school after my club of course! Say, you should join Anime Club!"

"Henry!" Marth started to get annoyed. "I told you plenty of times before that I don't even like anime. There'd be no point for me to even join," explained the bluenet.

The other boy pouted again and then laughed. "Watashi wa Marusu-sama."

Marth placed his head on the desk and started to bang it a little. Boy, this kid wasn't going to give up, was he? He was tempted just to say yes to shut him up, but he didn't want that. When he rose his head, he noticed the masked individual staring at them and shot a glare at him.

The bell finally rang as Olimar gave the students their bell work. Not even five minutes into class, Chief Resetti entered along with officers Saki and Frederick. Marth quickly looked out the window, feeling quite embarrassed that he knew one of them on a personal level.

Mr. Resetti's eyes scoped the room. As he came across a certain person, a wide grin formed on his face. Clearing his throat, he finally spoke.

"Alright class, I'm sure you already know why I'm here from the announcements this morning. Well, someone stole a very valuable ring that was on hold for someone yesterday at Subspace Jewelers," he said. He began pacing back and forth, getting a good glimpse of all the students in the classroom. Gaius looked away, muttering something as Malon sighed.

Olimar cleared his throat, still a bit bummed out that the police interrupted his lesson. Speaking up, the little alien said "Excuse me class, I guess I can just restart explaining today's les-!" Before he could finish, Mr. Resetti cut him off.

"RESTART?! THERE IS NO RESTARTING IN THIS WORD! ONCE YOU START SOMETHING YOU MUST SEE IT FROM START TO FINISH AND DON'T FORGET TO SAVE!"

The anatomy teacher jumped back and sat on his seat. Sighing to himself, he figured it was best to teach after the police officers left, forgetting that Chief Resetti happened to be very aggressive.

"Anyways," exclaimed the mole. "I think I found my suspect once and for all. We had tons of run downs with him before so this should be easy. You, come with me."

He motioned for Gaius to get up, making the students gasp. The orange haired boy rolled his eyes, knowing where this was going. Frederick couldn't help but ponder about something, but had to follow his boss along with Saki.

As the four left the classroom, Malon and a couple of other students decided to lean against the doorway to ease drop on their conversation. Olimar tried his best to tell the students to sit down, but he sighed wishing that he was more assertive.

Mr. Resetti looked at the boy, grinning wide. "Well, well, well look who I've caught once again. Valthiofr, what excuse do you have to say for yourself this time?"

Gaius shook his head, sighing. Moving his lollipop to the side of his mouth, the teen couldn't help but scoff. "Okay Mole, I wasn't even there at the mall yesterday. Besides, why would I want to steal a priceless ring when I could have myself a nice bag of candy."

Getting irritated, the chief slapped the lollipop from his mouth, making it hit the school floor. "SILENCE! I KNOW YOU'RE LYING. I CAN JUST TELL FROM THAT SMIRK MISTER!"

Shaking his head, the teen moaned. "Aww, you ruined a perfectly good piece of candy." Opening his pocket, he'd grab another sucker and place it in his mouth.

Before Resetti was about to do something, Saki stepped in. "Sir, the boy's not lying. I can tell from the look of his eyes," he said.

Sighing, the chief was a bit disappointed. They entered the classroom once again, the students ease dropping moving back to their desks. Gaius went back to his seat.

"Alright then, I was sorry for interrupting this class. Just remember, there is NO RESETS in life okay?" As the police made their way through the door, Frederick finally spoke up.

"Wait!"

Turning around, the mole shook his head, sighing. "What is it now Fred? Do you know something that I don't?!"

Thinking for a moment, the brunette began to replay the evidence he discovered on the back of his mind. He remembered looking at the camera this morning to notice something odd. Observing it, he knew from the looks of it, the camera was disabled with some sort of dark magic. Getting back in touch with reality, the brunette motioned for Henry to

get up.

Everyone looked surprised as the silver haired boy got up, following Frederick and the other two outside the hallway. A couple of students got up again to ease drop, including Marth.

"Henry, did you shoplift the ring from the story yesterday?!" asked Frederick.

"Nya ha! Yeah, I did!" he replied, laughing. Mr. Resetti tried not to punch the kid, already finding him to be a nuisance, especially since he seems to be taking this as a joke.

Sighing, Frederick decided to ask why he did it. The older man was surprised that the teen would even do something like this.

"A friend told me to and there I was, ring in hand and everything!" chirped the boy.

Saki exchanged looks with the chief, both seeming to look creeped out. From what they gathered, they realized that the boy was very childish, almost as if he didn't even understand his own actions. The also sensed a very dark aura around the boy, knowing that he could possibly end their life in one piece.

"Kid…. I don't know what to say… you, just go back into your classroom," said the mole. Saki and Mr. Resetti began to leave, not wanting to be anywhere near Henry. Frederick, on the other hand, wasn't going to let him slide easy.

"Henry… I'm going to see what I can do for your punishment. Your behavior is inexcusable. The other two may have let you off the hook easily, but I'm afraid it's not the same with me."

"Does this mean I get to go to jail?!" he replied, being really excited. Frederick shook his head, sighing.

"No. The most you're probably going to get is some sort of probation and community service. I'm still trying to think, so we'll see."

"Aww. Make sure they don't send me to that place, anywhere but that place!"

Sighing, Frederick shook his head. He figured it would be best to ask the people at the orphanage about Henry's arrangements rather than do it himself.

"Now go back to class." Frederick ushered him in before leaving.

Nodding, Henry entered the class with that happy-go-lucky demeanor again. Taking his seat next to Marth, the other students just stared at him but he didn't seem to mind. Olimar just went on with the lesson like nothing ever happened.

Fifth period with Titania went by faster than usual. She decided to play a video based on the things they'll be reading in class for the year. Marth tried his best to pay attention, his mind being more focused on his girlfriend. Eventually school ended as Marth headed to the locker room to get changed for Kendo practice.

He'd met up with Link as they both changed into the proper gear. The other boys entered the locker room as well to change. The two friends made their way into the school dojo, sitting on the side.

Eirika noticed the two and moved closer to sit with Marth.

"Hey, what's up?" she asked them. The light blue haired girl was able to read Link's body language well as she turned to Marth.

"Nothing much, just excited to be practicing again. My guardian's been out of town for a week now so I haven't been practicing as much lately. I also forgot that my cousin does kendo as well so…" He laughed nervously as he looked away.

Eirika looked interested now. "You have a cousin that does kendo as well? How old is he?" she asked.

"He's about eighteen. Believe it or not, he graduated from high school last year."

"That's neat."

Their conversation died down as Ike entered the room. He'd tell Ephraim to take the newbies with him to narrow down those who've actually practiced this before. Seeing Marth in the room, he couldn't help but grip on his wooden sword harder.

"Today's agenda will be to spar with someone for practice. I suggest picking a partner for the day, preferably someone you don't know. Now go."

Before Marth could pick someone, Ike happened to specifically choose him out of all people. Link and Eirika decided to spar together.

Taking a deep breath, Marth got ready to spar with the taller boy. As they begin to practice, he could tell that he was using a lot more force than usual. After the hour, both of them were panting hard as they managed to block each other's moves.

"Not… bad…" said Ike.

"You're… not… bad yourself," exclaimed Marth.

The group left to get freshened up for the evening. Marth took a shower in the locker room along with the other boys before heading out. As Link left, he couldn't help but feel a hand slam him against the wall.

"What the hell do you think you're doing?!" badgered Ike.

"I was just getting ready to leave until you pushed me!" barked the bluenet. They both started to glare at each other as their eyes met one another.

"Don't play stupid with me! I know you're only dating Samus because I like her."

Marth laughed as he smirked. "So that's what this is all about?! How pathetic. I got to her first. If you had feelings for her, you should have spoken up a long time ago."

Getting pissed, Ike lifted Marth by his shirt collar. "If you do anything to fucking hurt her, your ass is mine!"

He'd drop him and storm off before his urge to kill Marth rose. The bluenet watched him, being pleased of his reaction. The more Marth thought, the more he realized that he actually hated Ike. He'd leave the locker room to meet up with Link to say goodbye.

Marth parted ways with Link to meet up with Samus. He was still irritated at Ike for his actions earlier, especially since he started dating the blonde. Part of him wanted to punch the spiky haired boy in the face while the other wanted to completely humiliate him. A small grin formed on the boy's face, being pleased that he started to slowly break Ike. Marth wanted him to fall down and hard, especially since he done the same to him six years ago.

He'd head outside the school and spotted Samus running happily towards him. The two embraced into a hug, pecking each other on the lips. They started to head over to Samus' car.

"Hey Sam, how was track practice?" he asked.

"It was great! Surprisingly, the new freshman we got is really good. He almost managed to put Sonic in his place, which made me really proud!" exclaimed the blonde.

"Interesting. Did you happen to catch his name by any chance?"

"Yeah. The kid's name is Ness. It's surprising how good he is for a first year student too!"

The two entered the car and discussed their plans for the first day. They decided on dinner and a movie, seeing how the other options they had were a bit too much for now. The two love birds would head over to the rich side of town and park the car.

They'd hold hands and walk through the neighborhood, embracing each other's feelings. Passing through the gardens, the two sat on a bench near the fountain and looked up to the sky.

"Samus, I'm really happy you're my girlfriend. I don't think it'd be the same if it was another girl to be honest," said Marth. They'd lean their heads against one another.

"Me too."

"Say, did you hear about the whole police thing today?"

"Yeah, did they ever find the culprit by any chance?" asked Samus. She was curious to know who'd even be foolish enough to rob a jewelry store.

"They did. You won't believe who did it but the suspect turned out to be Henry out of all people!" Marth couldn't help but grin at the thought of Henry possibly going to jail.

"Really? That's a surprise, then again he probably thought it was some game. He doesn't really understand the consequences of his actions now, does he?"

Marth shook his head. He was tempted to bring up Ike but didn't knowing that she was very good friends with him. The two got up and headed out to a little café in the corner. They've began getting to know each other on a more personal level, even sharing some of their insecurities with one another. After they finished their meal, the two went out to see a movie to finish their first date.

During the evening, Frederick decided to stop by the hospital. Heading over to the second floor, he walked up to the receptionist desk.

"Excuse me miss, do you know where I can find the office of Dr. Tabuu by any chance?" he asked.

The Chansey looked up to him. She would direct him to the man's office before heading back to her work station. Frederick approached the man's office, knocking before he stepped inside. A strange creature happened to be inside the office, looking at the brunette.

"How may I help you sir?" he questioned.

"I was sent here from the head of the orphanage. He told me that one of your patients happens to be a kid name Henry, am I correct?"

"Henry..?" Tabuu needed a last name, knowing that name was fairly common around these areas.

"Sullivan. Henry Sullivan."

"Oh yes, Henry! What about him?"

"It appears that he's committed a crime and I'm not exactly sure what to do for his punishment. I've already discussed this with the orphanage and his psychologist who both referred me to you sir."

"I see." Tabuu took a moment to think. "I could up his medication dosage. It'd make him drowsy, but good enough to slow him down. If he's really acting up, I guess we can arrange him to spend a week at our mental health facility."

"I really don't think he's that much out of line. I was thinking more of placing him under foster care. From what it looks like, the orphanage already has enough on their plate having to manage children which doesn't give Henry the proper role model he needs," affirmed Frederick.

"Hmm, I guess I can do so, but who would even want to foster him?"

"That's what I'm trying to figure out. Who would be the perfect family to monitor Henry for the time being. I'm still trying to figure out how to punish him as well."

The two men continued to discuss over the child as they came to a conclusion. Henry was in for a rude awakening tomorrow.

There we end on a cliffhanger, not getting to know Henry's sentence.

For the Olivia and Henry part, I decided to pay a homage to their support conversation seeing as its really cute!

Now, this is going to help me for my next poll to set up for when I upload the next chapter. So, please give me names as who you'd want to see as a nominee for the Junior class homecoming queen/king. Please note that Zelda, Ike, Marth and Olivia are already going to be options.

Question time!

1. What do you think Henry's punishment should be? I'm leaving his fate in your hands

2. Who should be his foster parent/guardian

3. When should Link learn about Masked Marth's true identity?

4. What would you like to see in Chapter 18?

That's it. Please tune in for the return of the Anime Club in Chapter 18 as well along with two new characters that are involved in it!

See ya!

Chapter 19: This Day Just Keeps Getting Stranger

Holy crap, this chapter alone(not including the author's note) ended up being around 7,662 alone.

I tried my best to get everything you guys wanted addressed/seen in Chapter 18.

For the Peach Baking story, that'll be coming up soon as I'm going to be working on that one next to get it started. Thankfully that one won't take as much words as this did.

I guess I really wasn't lying when I said the chapters are going to get longer as we go hehe.

Anyways, we get to meet the two kids and get to see Masked Marth interact a bit more.

Also a shoutout to KrazyKat12 for being the 100th reviewer! For being number 100, you win a special prize which is a drawing! What would you like drawn hehe? I also thank you all for the hard work I put into this fic.

Now, here's Chapter 18!

Characters that aren't from Smash Brothers
Masked Marth(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Morgan[Male](Fire Emblem Awakening)
Titania(Fire Emblem 9/10)
Olivia(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Merric(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Frederick(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Ricken(Fire Emblem Awakening)
Wolt(Fire Emblem Binding Blade)
Lilina(Fire Emblem Binding Blade)
Henry(Fire Emblem Awakening)

Marth got up the next morning to get ready for school. He hoped that Henry was absent today, especially since yesterday's events. The bluenet didn't know how much longer he could stand him before he snapped. In fact, he wished for Henry to move away or something seeing how he's just a nuisance. The teen himself almost found it too amusing how almost the entire school knew of the crow boy. Heck, it was hilarious how they talked about him all the time and Henry didn't even know. Maybe he did, but Marth figured he wasn't the type to care.

He'd head downstairs to meet Elice in the kitchen. Today he decided he was going to have a bowl of cereal for breakfast along with a banana. Marth greeted his sister by pecking her on the check and hugged her. Opening the fridge, he grabbed the milk carton and closed it. Next, he opened the cupboards and grabbed the cereal along with a small bowl before serving himself.

"Hey Elice?"

"Hm?"

"When's Jagen coming back?" He missed his guardian so much, even if he's only been gone for a whole week. Marth needed someone to talk to about his problems and the older man always helped him.

"He should be coming back by next week," she answered.

A small smile was on his face as he thanked his sister. Marth hoped that Jagen would come home sooner but he figured you can't rush a business trip. The boy finished his meal, saying goodbye to his sister before he left. Little did he know that his day was going to get strange.

Marth began his walk to school. A car passed as Douglas and DK greeted the bluenet, even offering him a lift before heading off. As he began to cross the street, the bluenet stopped as he heard someone calling his name.

"Marth waaaaaaaaaait!"

Turning to the source, he'd see Caeda running up to him. She looked at him and shook her head.

"What's gotten into you lately?!" she asked him. The bluenette herself was concerned for her friend ever since he started acting differently. Caeda hoped that Marth wasn't going through a rough time.

The bluenet shrugged in response. "I don't know what you're talking about."

Getting annoyed, she turned away from him. "Quit lying. First you break a promise to your best friend and now you're enemies. Now the football players are suddenly friends with you, Marth what happened that Saturday night?! Don't tell me…" She gasped, exactly knowing the answer. The girl happened to be more upset than angry. "You ditched Roy so you can hang out with the football players, didn't you?!"

"I didn't mean to… I'm sure the party was lousy anyways." Marth quickly covered his mouth, trying to take back what he just said.

Caeda slapped Marth in the face. "He spent the whole entire party waiting for you! He couldn't even focus on anything because you weren't there!" She tried to contain her emotions, feeling a mixture of anger and hurt boil through her veins.

"Have you ever thought about someone else's feelings before your own Marth?! Are you really that selfish?! And to think I was going to ask you out to the Homecoming dance!" Before Marth could say something, Caeda ran away from him.

The bluenette didn't pay any attention to where she was going as she bumped into someone, tripping herself as well.

Masked Marth almost lost his balance, but managed to quickly react before he fell. Noticing Caeda, he offered the girl a hand as he helped her up. He took note of Caeda's body language as he grabbed her book bag.

"Is something bothering you milady? You look upset."

Looking down, Caeda told him about Marth. She explained everything about him; from how he used to be to what he became now. Masked Marth nodded, understanding where she was coming from.

"That's very unfortunate to hear. I hope he comes to his senses soon. In fact, I have him in all my classes miss…"

"Caeda," she answered, giving him a name. "How is he in his classes uh…?"

"Marth. He's doing well but every time I try to befriend him, he shoots me down as if I'm an enemy."

"That's strange. Whatever's going on with him, I hope he's okay."

As Marth arrived at the school gates, he froze as he saw Masked Marth and Caeda talking with each other. He felt angry for a strange reason before he left to go meet up with Samus.

Roy and Wolt would be standing by the lockers as Marth passed by them with his girlfriend. Both of them shot him a glare before resuming their conversation. Samus peered over to them, then back to her boyfriend.

"Hey Marth?" she asked.

"Yeah?"

"What's up with your friend there, did something happen?"

Marth gulped, quickly thinking of a lie to cover it up. "Let's just say that shit happened and we're not on speaking terms."

The blonde blinked, noticing that he was very hesitant to answer her question. She begin to think that there was more than just that, especially since she spotted him shooting off more glares towards their direction yesterday during PE. Samus knew something was up but didn't even bother to ask Marth knowing it wasn't her business in the first place.

The two lovebirds entered the classroom, taking their assigned seats as they began answering their bell work. A few minutes later Snake give the class their agenda.

"I want you guys to work in pairs of three while working on your study guides for Friday's test. If you end up have side conversations and fail the test, well, that ain't my problem."

Marth got up with his stuff, moving a desk towards Samus. He noticed that Masked Marth was working with them as well, which made him angry. The three opened up their textbooks, each tackling a different section to save time. Glancing up, he saw Masked Marth and Samus making casual talk.

"*Look at him, thinking he's so smug. I'll…. I'll show him!*"

The silver haired boy wasn't at the school grounds this morning. Instead, he was in the court room with Frederick and the judge getting his sentence. The boy happily grinned humming as he sat patiently and looked around. Frederick rose his brow, giving him a look as if it said to knock it off already.

Coming to a verdict, the judge looked down at the teen from his chair.

"Henry Sullivan, for your crime of shoplifting a priceless one of a kind ring from a store, I sentence you to two months of community service and a temporary ban on your dark magic until you shape up your attitude."

The boy's grin dropped as he opened his eyes. "What. Did. You. Just. Say?!" He clenched his fists together, shaking as his voice started rising.

"I can deal with the community service but take away my magic from me? I don't think so…" Before he can hex the judge, Frederick quickly grabbed his frail body and placed a special type of bracelet on the boy's wrist.

Henry shifted back to his cheerful demeanor once again, smiling with his eyes closed. The judge winced a bit, finding the defendant to be quite strange. The older man cleared his throat to finish the boy's sentence now he's calmed down.

"That bracelet you have on you just now bans you from using your dark magic and performing hexes. It'll only allow you do use it during your PE session to complete certain tasks. When your behavior improves, it'll naturally come off on its own. Also until further stated, you're to be placed into foster care under the watchful eye of Frederick."

The brunette was shocked at the judge's decision, but accepted it. He'd motion for Henry to follow him as the case was just dismissed. They'd both leave the court house, heading back into the police car and drove away.

Frederick looked back to Henry who seemed to be staring off into space. He figured the least he could do is treat the kid to breakfast, especially if he's under his watchful eye. They'd stop off at a small dinner to discuss Henry's living arrangements as well before heading off to pick up his belongings.

Henry looked around as they sat down, being amazed at everything he saw. "Wow, I've never been inside a restaurant before," he said, being astounded.

The older man took a sip of his coffee before answering the adolescent. "I assumed you haven't especially since you've spent the majority of your life living inside the orphanage. I've figured since I dragged out of bed this morning that I might as well treat you to breakfast."

Nodding, Henry looked around once again. The diner was quiet, seeing that most people were at work. He began pulling out napkins out of the dispenser, being fascinated by it. The stern man gave him a look and moved the dispenser towards him, telling Henry to stop.

The teen pouted before moving onto another thing. He began playing around with the salt and pepper shakers, making them dance. Henry chuckled at his own actions which caused Frederick to sigh and take those away from him as well.

From his own observations, Frederick could easily tell that Henry never had a proper childhood. He acted so much like a child just from not understanding the consequences of his actions alone. The brunette felt sorry for him but he wanted to know Henry on a more personal level. Part of him wanted to ask about his origins but quickly decided against it, knowing that it'd be too much. Instead, he figured it'd be better to ask him about his life in the orphanage to get off to a good start. Besides, he needed to break the awkward silence after all.

"So Henry," asked Frederick. "What was life for you like back at the orphanage?"

"Well," began the silveret "It wasn't too bad. The head of the orphanage was a pretty nice lady even though I got in trouble a lot. People would donate necessities to us such as clothes, food, bodily needs, you name it. The living arrangements were kinda cozy, believe it or not. They made sure every orphan never went to bed hungry. There was always fresh water and the air ventilation inside worked like a charm. "

"I see." He would think for a moment to let the information sink in. Frederick figured that the funding for the Brawlville orphanage was enough for them to pay for food and utilities such as electricity and water. The man responded back, asking "You don't have to answer this one, but how long have you exactly lived at the orphanage?"

"Ooh! About eleven years now. For some reason when adoption days always came nobody wanted to pick me but I didn't mind. I had all my woodland friends to keep me company as faces came and go."

Frederick nodded in response. He didn't realize that Henry turned out to be a really depressing individual. It was distressing to even think about everything the child's ever gone through. The older man started to think that Henry didn't want to accept the reality that nobody wanted him, thus taking on mannerisms similar to a child for attention. He'd get up and excuse himself to make a phone call outside. Dialing a number, he placed his cellphone to his ear as someone picked up.

Elice excused herself from her job as a barista in the university cafeteria as she answered her phone.

"Hello?"

"Hello Elice. I need a favor to ask of you, "responded Frederick.

"Oh! What is it?!" she answered. The bluenette took out a notepad to jolt notes just in case she forgets.

"You see, there's this young adult I'm currently fostering. He's supposed to be under my supervision but the problem is that I'm on duty almost 24/7. I was thinking that maybe he can spend the weekdays with you and the weekends with me since I'm off those days," he said, explaining it to her.

Elice paused for a moment to think of her answer. Once she thought this thoroughly, she replied "I'd love to. I wouldn't mind having another person around especially since it gives Marth someone to talk to when I'm not around."

"Okay, good. Now let me tell you everything you need to know about the child." Frederick begin to explain everything he knew about Henry to Elice, even from the medications he's required to take.

Around the middle of first period, Marth received a text message. Grabbing his cellphone, he checked to see who sent him a message. Seeing it was from Elice, the bluenet opened it, hoping she was okay. Reading the message, it appears his sister was asking him if he was okay with sharing his bed with someone else. Marth responded to the text message before putting his phone away just in case Snake sees it. He looked to Samus and Masked Marth as the three continued to work on their study guides for the test that's this Friday.

"So Marth," asked Samus "How are you enjoying your time at Burazazu High?!"

Smiling, the masked individual couldn't help but respond back to her which made Marth growl under his breath.

"I quite am. Thank you for asking. It's interesting how things in Brawlville are so different especially from where I came from. To be honest, it's a pleasant change. In a sense, it's like searching for a new hope," he responded, answering the blonde's question.

Marth rolled his eyes and pouted. He didn't understand why this guy tried so hard to be his friend. It was rather annoying but he'd still take Henry over this guy any day. Something told him that Samus might end up falling for him even if she was his girlfriend. He couldn't help but scratch the paranoia from his head. The bluenet started to feel a little nauseated and asked Snake if he can go to the bathroom until he felt better. Getting the approval, he headed out the classroom and into the men's restroom.

He began running the faucet, soaking his face with water. A familiar voice could he heard as they were glad that the bluenet showed up.

"What's the matter Marth, scared?!"

Looking up, he came face to face with his reflection once again. Glaring at him, the bluenet just rolled his eyes.

"Tch, yeah right, like that's any of your business anyways. Don't you have a better hobby to do than creep on people anyways like say, shutting up?!"

His reflection was appalled at Marth's reaction as he folded his arms and pouted. "Aww, that really hurt, NOT!" He started to laugh as the teen shook his head.

"Now anyways, the problem seems to be that new kid am I correct?!"

Looking down at the ground, Marth nodded. "He's getting too close to Samus almost as if he wants to take her away from me!"

Thinking for a moment, his reflection only sighed. "Then one up him. Show him that you don't want him around you. From the looks of it, he's already replacing you in your old friendship circle. Notice how everyone's slowly forgetting about you

even the ones you didn't piss off."

The boy froze. He knew that was true, especially how he treated Caeda this morning. Marth started to slowly realize he hated himself but loved the attention he was receiving from the popular individuals. He decided that two could play at that game as he wanted to bring down Masked Marth. Out of all the things he could do, he wanted that boy gone from this place forever.

"Marth, if I were you I'd just dump them. You don't need your old friends not especially after the way they've been treating you. Just move on and be one with the popular kids. At least they know how to give you attention. "

"Yeah… maybe I should give them up. After all, that jackass Roy hates me. And besides, I got new friends anyways. If they decide to leave me, I can just move on seeing how I'm getting popular now!"

"Yep." The reflection grinned darkly. "Oh, good job on losing some weight by the way. I'm going to suggest taking some laxatives and whatnot to help you even more! Anything to achieve true beauty!"

Marth noticed his reflection returned back to normal as he looked at the watch. Realizing he's been spending too much time in the bathroom, he headed out and went back to class.

During passing period, Ganondorf heard some good news. The tall teen smirked, being pleased as he had something planned for the future. *"So it seems that Henry's got his magic temporarily sealed for the time being. Soon, he will face my wrath."*

Ganondorf recalled last year when that little wrench intervened with his plans. Everything was going smoothly until he had to show up. The Gerudo remembered it like it was yesterday.

The football players decided to have fun with the band kids today. They ambushed them in the fields, causing havoc and made the poor band geeks run amok. Wolf had a group of the band kids cornered as the freshman ones started crying for mercy. Some of them bowed down to Bowser, pleading for their life. The boys were pleased at their results until they heard a voice behind them.

"*Hey! Pick on someone your own size!"*

The gang turned around to notice Ricken. The young freshman happened to be in a battle stance, getting ready to cast something. The football players looked at each other and laughed.

"*You really think you're going to make a difference pipsqueak?" barked Wolf.*

"*If I were you, I'd be running home to your mama," taunted Douglas.*

Getting angry, Ricken glared at the football players. They lunged towards him as the boy casted Elwind on them. "Don't look down on me!"

A big gust of wind engulfed the majority of the football players, the boys flying as they hit the bleachers. Little did the auburn haired kid know that Ganondorf had him at a disadvantage. Ricken lost his cool when he noticed Ganondorf ready to strike him with his dark energy. The young boy panicked, wondering if this was the end for him. He winced, closing his eyes to avoid seeing the brutal damage that'll be done to him.

"*Nice try!"*

Opening his eyes, Ricken noticed Henry on the field as he blocked Ganondorf's attack. The Gerudo growled as he got ready to attack again.

"*Get out of the way so I can finish him off," he commanded. Both made intense eye contact with each other, observing their movement.*

Henry just grinned darkly. "Aw, there's more where that came from. Besides, someone looks like they could use some death."

Both boys striked each other with dark magic, causing everyone in the field to freak out. Henry managed to best Ganondorf and shot a dark wave at his stomach, causing him to fly into a wall. The silver haired boy approached him, getting ready to cast another spell at him until Ricken stopped him.

"*Stop Henry! If you hit him again, he'll get killed! These jerks already learned their lesson enough as it is!" piped out the*

shorter boy. The silveret looked to his friend and whined. The two walked away, leaving the football players in awe.

"Revenge will be mine."

The bell rang as second period was now in session. Mr. Game and Watch went over their next lesson, confusing many students. Marth wrote a note to Link, passing it to him as it asked if he wanted to work in the library afterschool today. Writing his answer, he passed it back to Marth as the bluenet opened it, smiling. As the lesson ended, he got a bit jealous as he saw Masked Marth conversing with the Hylian. Before he could approach him, the bell rang as the students left for third period.

Marth entered the boy's locker room and got changed. As he headed out, he noticed Red near him once again. Scowling at the boy, he leaned against the wall and shook his head.

"You really should get out while you still have the time. There's hope for you after all Marth," said the Pokémon trainer.

"And what if I don't? I like how everything's going so far. It's like if the world's finally paying me back for screwing me over so many times."

The brunet sighed, shaking his head. "You really don't get it, do you? Aren't you truly that selfish? I mean, look at your friends. Don't you see how much you're hurting them? They might not show it but deep down they miss you."

The bluenet just laughed. "You really think they're hurt?! Look, they're better off without me plus I needed this change for a good while now.

Red shook his head once again. "You truly are disgusting. And I wanted to believe there was hope for you but I guess I was wrong. Just know this, if you keep up this charade the future ain't going to be bright for you."

The boy left Marth scoffing at him. Once again the bluenet thought Red was full of himself as he made his way towards the gymnasium. On his way, he passed Roy and Wolt who both once again gave him a distasteful look.

"Oh look, it's the princess," called Wolt.

"I know right?! Look, she even has a tiara on her head. Probably wants to rule the whole school and bitch at everyone," added Roy. The two boys laughed as they went to get changed. Marth cringed, wanting to punch them so badly in the face but knew it wasn't worth it. Besides, they weren't royalty anyways.

As the class proceeded on, they did their usual warm ups. Marth was bummed that Henry did come to school after all, knowing he'd have to bear fourth period with him. Today's PE agenda was Break the Targets to practice their skills, jump and agility. The Pokémon pressed a button, changing the gym to suit each student's abilities.

Each kid took a turn, doing their best to finish the beginning stage. Marth managed to get all the targets in time with a stimulation sword that resembled Falchion. As Masked Marth passed him, he congratulated him before starting his run. It turned out as the students observed him; he had similar move sets to Marth, even another Falchion copy.

As the boy completed the training, everyone congratulated him and told him he was great. Samus even paid attention to him which only didn't help Marth but wasn't in Ike's favoring either. They were dismissed from the gymnasium as they went into the locker room to change. Masked Marth approached Marth to congratulate him once again.

"You were amazing," he said.

"So were you," answered the bluenet coldly. Before the new kid could say another word, Marth left. Sighing to himself, he headed out as well to wait for the bell to ring. As the boys left, Roy told Wolt to head out early since he felt like he forgot something.

Entering the boy's locker room, Roy went to get his wallet from the locker only to see Ike planning something awful against Marth. Sure they weren't on best terms as of now but he felt that the prince didn't deserve anything like that. If he wasn't on school grounds, the redhead would have lunged at Mr. Popularity by now.

Clearing his throat, Roy broke the silence. "If you lay a hand on him, I'll make sure you don't see the light of day."

Sighing, Ike just laughed and shook his head. "Says who? The shrimp that can't even defend himself either. Why do you care for him, I thought you hated him."

"I do," he responded swiftly. "It's just that your reason's pathetic. I mean, if she liked you wouldn't you two been dating a

long time ago? Just think about it."

Snapping, Ike literally lifted Roy in the air by his shirt collar and slammed him against the wall. "Don't you ever fucking bring her in this?!" Dropping him, the Kendo captain left the scene before it got someone's attention.

Catching his breath, Roy slowly got up. "Marth… is this really worth changing your image just to be someone else."

Olivia grabbed her lunch and went to join her group of friends. Lilina, Nana and Sheik greeted her as they began to eat their lunches.

"So, how's the puppy so far?" asked Lilina.

"It's doing better. From the looks of it, it looks like it's going to make a full recovery soon," she answered back.

"That's good! Say, what play are you guys planning to hold auditions for? I'm curious," asked Nana.

"Oh, we're still deciding on that. So far, Sheik and I came to the conclusion that maybe we should let the club vote. As they continued to converse, Olivia didn't know that she was in for a real surprise.

Daisy and Krystal devised a plan called Operation: Embarrass Olivia at Lunch. Waiting for the perfect time, they saw the pink haired girl get up from the table to throw away her tray. As she came closer, the blue fox pushed her into the silver haired boy as they both fell. Everyone near the scene stared as Olivia's face met with Henry's.

"Hi crazy lady! I see you're having a hex of a time," he said, laughing. Olivia screamed, quickly getting up and running off.

"Olivia!" Nana and Lilina ran after her as they left Sheik along. The boy figuring he had nothing better to do, ran after the two to help comfort her as well.

The cheerleaders bursted out laughing as students' murmurs about the scene could be heard. Some thought it was hilarious while some felt sorry for Olivia. They went on to talk about Henry along with the rumors and how strange he was.

The silver haired boy got up and shrugged before meeting his friends outside to play with the birds again.

Pit watched the scene, zoning out. Luigi just shook his head, being disgusted.

"Those-mean girls did it! That poor girl didn't-a trip on her own, they-a pushed her," exclaimed the Italian.

"They're such bitches. I wonder what that poor girl's even done to them anyways," added Kirby.

"Geez, someone really needs to get back at them. I mean, how long have these popular kids have been making people feel like shit?" questioned Roy.

"Uh, Roy. Not all of them are like that. Zelda's a great example of a sweet, popular gal who doesn't hurt people," explained Wolt.

As the boys talked, Caeda was spacing out the entire time. She stared at Marth from the distance in Ike's table, sighing softly to herself. The bluenette missed the old Marth, the one she knew from second grade. A part of her was angry at Ike for making Marth want to get close to him again while the other knew that was never under his control.

Meanwhile, Masked Marth ate his meal under the tree as he observed the other students. He didn't notice the sound of footsteps as Link joined him. They both greeted each other as they continued people watching.

"Flamingo…PUUUUUUUUUUUUNCH!"

The bluenet saw the kid he met from yesterday playing around with two of his friends while the third sat outside the sidelines. The Hylian decided to observe him as well, being reminded of the games he played with Colin and Aryll back at home.

"RADIANT DAAAAAAAAAAWN!" Morgan's fist would pass side by side with his friends as second friend ambushed them both.

"This is the end, friend!" she shouted, knocking them down. The three begin to laugh as the third friend looked away, scoffing.

"Ugh, you guys are so embarrassing! Why do I even hang out with you guys?!"

They laughed again as the trios started walking away. The third one looked and ran up to them, not wanting to be left alone.

'*I play a similar game to that back at home with my brother and sister.*'

"Really?" Masked Marth was interested. "I'm sure they have lots of fun playing. I was an only child, so I never got the opportunity to play games like that."

'*Maybe next time we can ask to join them. I'm sure they'll be willing to accept more people to play with them.*'

"Yeah, I'd like that." The bell rang as the two friends parted ways. Masked Marth made his way towards Anatomy class, just to be greeted by Henry.

"Hi Marth! Did you see your brother Marth anywhere, get it?! Because you two are both named Marth and are clones!"

Chuckling a bit, he shook his head. They both entered the classroom, conversing for a bit. Unlike Marth, Masked Marth actually listened to all the random nonsense the boy spewed, even giving him feedback on some of the things.

"So, where are you doing community service at if you don't mind telling me of course?"

"Oh! I got to pick an animal shelter! It's really great because I love doggies, kitties, you name it! I've always felt that I had a more special connection with animals, especially seeing how no one wanted to play with me when I was a child."

"I'm sorry to hear that…"

"Oh, it ain't so bad. I've learned to amuse myself after all, nya ha!"

As Marth headed for Anatomy class, he felt a forceful push behind his back as he flew. Looking up, he saw Ike smirking.

"Look, the delicate princess flew. "

Rolling his eyes, Marth got up. "You're just acting childish because Samus is my girlfriend. Seriously, drop it."

"Okay then, I hope to see you tomorrow afterschool… that's if, you're not scared."

The taller bluenet left as Marth winced before heading to class.

During English class, they were assigned their first book of the year. Marth opened it up and began reading along with the rest of the class. He found it nice that Titania gave them a reading day seeing how she was busy with grading work for her other classes. Around the middle of class, she stopped everyone for a moment to show them an example of a perfect paper.

"Listen class, I've been grading your essays and during my years of teaching I never came to one as flawless as this. We should give an applause to Marth Aritia for his perfect essay."

Everyone clapped while Marth just glared. *"How more perfect was this douchebag anyways? First he's good with seducing woman, next he takes Caeda and Link away from me and now he's so perfect at writing. Bah humbug."*

After school ended, Marth headed over to meet up with Link inside the library. The two decided to help each other with their Pre-Calc homework seeing how they were stuck on a few things. The bluenet entered the library and looked around. He forgot that today was the first official meeting of Anime Club so he was in for a surprise. Marth noticed the librarian sighing as she placed her head on the desk to bear yet another club meeting.

The bluenet couldn't help but feel sorry for her, knowing that even at lunch they were a ridiculous bunch. He wondered how Lissa could even hang out with them especially since she was more calm, then again he never seen her actually watch a Japanese cartoon she really enjoyed. Marth spot Link sitting at a table near a bookshelf as he went to join him.

The two boys opened their textbooks to today's lesson as they begin to go over the steps again to refresh their mind.

Hal entered the library greeting Miriel once again.

"Hello Miss Miriel, it looks like we meet once again," he exclaimed. The man enjoyed talking to the librarian even though he couldn't see why she needed the pain medication at her desk.

The red headed woman looked up at him and forced herself a smile. "Awaiting the arrival of your fellow disciples?" she asked.

"Of course," he replied. He'd take out a couple of anime magazines he brought with him. "Today's agenda we're just going to let the kids look at the latest magazines while we still try to figure out the anime they're going to watch next week!"

Nodding, Miriel just sighed. "That's miraculous," she answered in a sarcastic tone. "Now let me be, I have an obligation that muse be fulfilled."

"Alright," said Hal. "See you later then."

The brunet walked over to the far end of the library. Miriel took out her notebook again to conduct her research on the Anime club. She was curious as to why they were so distant when alone but obnoxious when brought together. The woman figured it was one of those mysteries that were never meant to be solved but she wanted an answer.

Looking towards the door, she'd see Lissa and Maribelle enter along with Ricken and Henry. She noticed a black bracelet around the silver haired boy's wrist. Miriel figured that his dark magic must have got sealed for the time being which made her sigh of relief. Little did the librarian know that she'd be in for a big surprise.

Two more teenagers entered the library. Getting a glimpse, the red head didn't recognize one of the faces seeing as they were new and when she looked over to the other one, her face dropped.

"Oh fuck…" she muttered lowly.

A tall, blonde hair boy walked in the library alongside Morgan. Recalling him from last year, Miriel learned that his name happened to be Owain. Even without the club, this youth happened to be extremely loud. Last year, he tried attempting to join almost every club at school but it failed. He was famous for talking in an overly theatrical fashion and for even speaking as if he was one of those anime characters himself.

"HOY THERE!"

Miriel cringed, forgetting how loud he was. She reached for her painkillers, taking one now before it turns into a migraine once again.

The group turned to see Owain.

"Owain you're back!" the group exclaimed. Even though they couldn't see it, Red smiled. The silent boy enjoyed his presence, even if he was obnoxious.

Another girl entered the library, quickly running to the far end and glomped Owain.

"Hello friends!"

Feeling the sudden ambush, he turned around. "Halt! What fiend goes there! "When he saw it was only Cynthia, he sighed. "For a minute fair maiden, I thought you were a wicked fiend. Thou shall save you now from the Uchiha clan."

Henry just gave him a look. "Again with the Naruto. Can we not go there, please?!"

"Thank you Henry," said Maribelle. She found that anime to be rather annoying as well. The group looked through the magazines as they got hyper.

Marth cringed along with Link as they couldn't focus due to the Anime Club. Both of them wanted to tell them to shut up, but knew it wouldn't even work. Heck, not even the club president himself could control them.

What didn't help was that the whole Anime Club decided to play Dragon Ball Z. Owain acted like he was Goku as Morgan played Vegeta.

"KAMEHAME HAAAAAAAAAA!"

Innes entered the library to pick up some more crafts as he saw the scene from far away. Sighing, he shaked his head once more.

"Fucking weeaboos I swear…."

Meanwhile after cheer practice, the girls were tidying themselves in the bathroom. Krystal was putting on some more make up while Jigglypuff and Daisy fixed their hair. They've been discussing about the usual whenever it was cute boys or even what they're going to wear to homecoming. The three girls were joined by Amy as she entered the bathroom.

"Wasn't that so funny at lunch today?!" exclaimed the blue fox. She couldn't help but laugh as she remembered Olivia's face.

"Well duh!" responded Jigglypuff. "Who would of thought she'd run away from him, then again he's creepy as hell."

"Henry's gross okay," answered Daisy. "If you ever come to school in the early mornings, he's always like there talking to crows. He even talks to himself and paces around. I honestly think he's retarded or something."

Amy got an idea. The pink hedgehog smirked before barging into their conversation. "Guys, I just got an idea!"

"Speak now or forever hold your peace."

"Well," she said, beginning to explain. "You know how we're going to get Olivia to be one of the nominees? What if we somehow get Henry on there, you know as a joke! Then if people actually vote for them we can make sure she has to be stuck with him!"

"Oh my god Amy, that's genius!" proclaimed Krystal. The four girls laughed, finding their plan to be completely perfect.

"Imagine it, the whole school would be stumped to see her and one of the biggest losers as Homecoming king and queen. Olivia would probably be so embarrassed, she'd probably drop off the face of Earth!"

"Hey, what if we dump the bucket on them both?! It'd give the whole school a good laugh and it'd be a memory of a life time," stated the brunette.

"Totally! " Before they could go on, Peach and L'Arachel entered the restroom as the four girls quickly changed the subject. If Peach were to find out, they would be having a field day.

Afterschool, Marth parted ways with the Hylian as he began heading for the double doors. Before he left, he'd encounter Pit and Merric approaching him. The teen felt slightly anxious, hoping that neither of them would bring up his current situation with Roy.

"Hi Marth!" greeted the angel. He was holding a stack of papers as the greenet stand alongside him. Marth noticed he was in a cheerful mood but then again, when wasn't he ever in one?

Marth couldn't help but force a smile on his face. "Hey Pit! How did your day go?" he asked.

"Well, it was interesting. I had that dream again were I was battling eggplants or something like that. Then Palutena woke me up and said 'Pit it's time for school' and then I got up and got dressed, did the usual. As I went to eat breakfast, my eyes decided to go eggplant vision on me and I didn't get the chance to eat anything because I hate eggplants and those things are gross. Palutena then said 'Pit, I think you should say home because you might be starting a fever' and I told her 'Lady Palutena, I must go to school.' "Pit continued to chat his ear off, Marth letting it what he told him go through one ear and out the other.

He found Pit to be annoying at times, but enjoyed his presence. A part of him was glad that he talked to him like any other friend before the whole Roy drama.

"…Is it me or is it very hot in school today?" exclaimed the angel. Eventually Pit passed out as Marth knelt down to touch his forehead. Maybe the overly cheerful boy should have taken his guardian's advice after all seeing how he did have a fever.

Getting up, he looked over towards the other teen. "Merric, go get the nurse immediately."

"Right." Merric ran through the hallways, getting into the nurses office. Marth decided to stay by Pit's side before he left. A few minutes later, Pit was taken in and Marth and Merric parted ways. The bluenet did take note of his friend clutching onto a wind magic tome.

Marth made his way to his house, just to notice a police car there. Sprinting over, the bluenet hoped nothing happened to

Elice. As he opened the door, his jaw dropped as he saw Elice, Frederick and…. Henry?

His sister noticed he entered the house, smiling. "Hello Marth, how was school today?" she asked him.

"It was okay I guess. Say, what's he doing here anyways?" he asked.

"It's good that you've asked that. Henry's going under foster care to help him shape up his behavior. Seeing how I'm at work 24/7, I asked your sister to watch him for the weekdays while I have him on the weekends. I hope you don't mind," explained Frederick.

"I…. don't." Marth did mind, but he had to lie. From what it looked like, his sister already taken a liking to Henry.

"Then my work here is done. " Before Frederick left, he handed Elice a stack of paper explaining Henry's needs.

The silver haired boy turned to Marth and beamed. "Now we get to hang out all the time, kukuku! Maybe we'll become… blood brothers!"

The bluenet felt like locking himself in his room and crying. He felt himself screaming internally, especially since Henry was going to be staying with them for a while. At least he had community service to fulfill so he won't see him all the time. Marth wondered how Chrom was going to feel about this, seeing how Lissa is actually friends with the eerie boy.

Elice made the teen give Henry a tour of the house. While doing so, the boy wouldn't shut up as he cracked up terrible jokes and puns. Marth wondered how long it really was going to take until he snapped. He felt the urge to strangle Henry, but decided against it.

For dinner, they had to go by Henry's needs and eat a balanced diet based since he fatigues very easily. He hated how his sister seemed to be enjoying him, even laughing at his terrible jokes. *"Can this day get any worse?"* he thought to himself.

Marth couldn't believe that he had to share a bed with Henry out of all people. He told him to get some shut eye without saying goodnight. The bluenet felt that the silver haired crow boy was here to stay for a long time which is something he didn't approve. Part of him was angry because Elice took a liking to him and didn't even bother to see how creepy he was!

Henry turned the opposite way as he tugged on his own blanket. Not quite feeling sleepy yet, he decided to talk to Marth until he got tired.

"Marth? Don't you just love how dark and eloquent the night sky is?" he asked.

"Henry," mumbled the bluenet. "Go to bed…."

"But I'm not tired. Maybe I should count my toenail collection or something…"

Marth closed his eyes, just to quickly open them and jump. "Did you just say… that you have a toenail collection?!"

"Mmhmm! I like collecting toenails. In fact, I think it's neat." He'd grab a small box that was near the dresser and open it.

The bluenet couldn't help but look disgusted, especially from the fact that Henry collects his own toenails. "Henry…. that's disgusting." Marth shifted away as he drifted off back to sleep. He'd feel the bed shift as the other boy turned on the lap and grabbed his water bottle. After a few minutes, Henry came back inside and hopped on the bed.

Marth looked over to him once again. "What were you just doing now?!" he asked, not trusting him. He hoped he didn't do anything funny to the house arrangements or messed up the bathroom.

"I almost forgot to take my medicine," answered Henry.

Turning away, Marth mumbled "What kind?!"

"Zoloft."

The two finally drifted off into slumber land. Marth was glad that Henry finally stopped talking as he was able to sleep.

Marth woke up around one thirty in the morning. Getting up, he noticed that Henry was gone from his bed. The bluenet headed outside his room to use the restroom. As he finished, he heard faint muffled sounds. Being curious, Marth

slowly headed downstairs as quietly as he can, trying his best not to make a sound. As he came downstairs, he followed the sound of the source as it was in the living room.

Peeking over, he noticed Henry sitting on the couch in a fetal position as his muffled cries could be heard. Being surprised, Marth moved two steps closer.

"*Wait…. Is he actually… crying?"*

The silveret tried his best to control his soft cries as it turned into gross sobbing.

It finally hit Marth that Henry might not been that strange kid after all. He was learning that the boy did have his own feelings and just masked them very well from the public eye. Marth started to realize that maybe those words, thoughts and body language of the other students did hurt him after all. In fact, Marth couldn't help but sympathize with him. Maybe they weren't so different after all like he said.

Footsteps could be heard as Marth moved to a darker corner to keep himself hidden. Elice held a flashlight in her hand as she came down and noticed the poor boy on the couch. Going to him, she hugged him as she started petting his hair to calm him down.

"Ssh…. There, there. Everything's going to be alright now."

Marth couldn't help but look down. He remembered that sister used to stroke him exactly like that when he was upset. Reality hit him hard as he begins to realize that his reflection was correct. Marth felt like he was being completely replaced but it hurt even more that his sister would soon forget him like everyone else.

He hurried himself up the stairs as softly as he can and entered his room. Tears flushed down his face as he felt betrayed. As he looked away and attempted to sleep, Marth felt the gentle touch of someone cuddling him as they stroked his hair. A small smile formed upon the boy's face as he fell asleep.

And that's a wrap for Chapter 18. I felt like mixing the Japanese!Henry and the English version of Henry from Awakening as in the Japanese game were he displayed more sympathetic elements and what not. Besides, I like making characters human because I find that fun.

Also Owain's pretty hard to write, but I like challenges.

Anyways, I don't know when I'll have Chapter 19 up, seeing how I have to write a boring Thesis Paper that's due next Saturday plus, I want to focus a bit on my next story. Don't worry though, I'll have it up eventually when my workload is lighter! :)

Story Questions
1. What do you think Ganondorf's going to do to Henry?
2. What is Marth going to wake up to tomorrow morning?
3. Why do Roy and Ike depise each other
4. What would you like to see in Chapter 19?

Also, the poll for Homecoming Queen and King is up so get voting. It's a blind poll this time as I don't want people knowing who's winning. Please note that the winning pair will affect the Homecoming Chapter and it's direction.

Also you have up to six choices(three pairs) to vote for. Please, please please vote for three males and three females! Please just don't vote for one or two options only!

If you're a guest, just check out my profile and post your votes in the review.

Other than that, I'll see you guys when Chapter 19 is out and/or when the first chapter of my new fic is out.

Chapter 20: Unexpected Feelings

Wow, I managed to write Chapter 19 while multitasking. I'm still working on the other story, but I felt that I could reward you guys with this one.

Remember, if you guys haven't voted in the poll this is a reminder that it's up there. Also, I'm planning if this one gets enough votes, to make another poll consisting of the finalist.

Anyways, here's chapter 19!

Characters who aren't from SSB
Henry(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Cynthia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Elice(Fire Emblem 1/3/11/12)
Owain(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Morgan[Male](Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Olivia(Fire Emblem: Awakening)
Chrom(Fire Emblem: Awakening)

The next morning, the bluenet slowly woke up to feel arms warped around him. He wondered how Samus got in his house as he slowly shifted his head until he saw Henry. Marth jumped, pushing the silver haired boy away as he screamed.

"GAAAAAAAH! What the hell?!" shouted the blue haired teen. The other boy slowly woke up, glancing over to Marth.

"Did I do that? I thought you were a teddy bear or something, covered in blood! Mm, yes blood," Henry answered, laughing. He found Marth's face expression to be priceless. Marth tilted his head, noticing that the silveret was back to normal.

"*Wow that was pretty fast. I wonder what was going on last night though but I'll figure that's none of my business…. He'll probably tell me anyways sooner or later seeing how he never shuts up."*

The two boys got off the bed and got ready for the school day. They both entered the bathroom at the same time, Marth feeling rather awkward around the dark magic user. Henry opened the medicine cabinet, grabbing more medication to take. Marth looked appalled, wondering what meds he was taking now.

"Geez, how much medication do you even take?!"questioned the bluenet. Henry cracked up at the boy's question, finding it hilarious. Smiling, he decided to answer his newfound blood brother.

"Well…. I actually lost count. I take my anti-depressant at night time, medication for hypotension, anemia, heart problems and of course my vitamins! Can't start a bloody CAWtastic day without the drugs!"

Marth blinked. He was absolutely shocked at all the medications that boy took and those problems as well. The bluenet never met anyone more strange until he came across Henry. Part of him wished that he would've listened to Roy in the beginning of the school year but he would have met him regardless. "That's a lot of problems to be honest… more than anyone I know, not to be rude or anything. But from what I'm getting at, you sound pretty…. Vulnerable."

Giggling, the boy replied "Yeah, I'll admit that I'm frail but there's nothing wrong with that. I pack one hex of a punch after all. Besides, you'd better be a good blood brother or the seizure will get you, nya ha!"

Sighing, Marth shook his head. "HENRY! Seizures are nothing to be joking about," scolded the bluenet. He was trying his best to resist slapping him, especially knowing that it could land him in trouble with his sister. Henry continued to have that goofy grin, laughing once again at Marth.

"You take everything too seriously, just like tumblr. I suggest taking lessons on how to relax like, maybe let's go out and loot graves sometime?" Henry suggested, finding his friend to be quite the amusement.

The bluenet sighed, shaking his head in distaste once again. "You really don't get it, do you? Serious medical conditions, no anything that's fatal should never be taken lightly. What if, let's say what if you died of one and never came back?" he explained.

Henry just shrugged in response. "Well, it'd be a clean death so I wouldn't mind. Speaking of this subject, if my blood

pressure gets really low, I do have seizures, nya ha! Don't worry though, I only pass out most of the time."

Marth felt that he'll never understand the case that is Henry Sullivan. It was one of those things you're supposed to ponder for all eternity, but never get a valid answer for. The two boys got out of the bathroom, heading downstairs to meet Elice for their morning meal. Entering the kitchen, they joined the bluenette over strawberry and waffles.

Elice greeted the boys, serving them their breakfast as she poured them both a glass of milk to go with it. The older girl joined them afterwards, digging in her own plate as well.

"So Henry," asked the bluenette. "When's your birthday?"

"Ooh! November 13th," exclaimed the silver haired boy. He'd play around with his fork for a bit, making airplane noises as Marth rolled his eyes in response.

Elice smiled at Henry's answer, nodding. "That's wonderful. If I'm not mistaken, it sounds like you're older than Marth. My little brother was born on April 20th if you were curious."

Henry beamed. "Wow…. That makes me an older brother!" Elice smiled at the boy's statement while Marth frowned. He already had an older sister and that was the only family he was fine with. He didn't want Henry intruding his life, trying to get close to him to crack his cold shell. Eventually everyone finished their breakfast as they parted ways.

The two schoolboys left the Lowell residence to journey on their way to the school yard. More crows started to flock around the house more than usual, joining Henry as he came outside. The usual silence that embarked with Marth on his stroll died as Henry chatted the whole way through. Marth was tempted to turn around and tell him to shut his mouth, but he heard the sound of a familiar engine.

"*Shit…. What if they see me with him out of all people?! I may have been a loser but he's a reject! Fuck, if they catch me and him together, I'll lose my growing popularity."*

Panicking, Marth's eyes scoped the neighborhood for a perfect solution. As his eyes caught sight of a bush near them, he pushed Henry into it, causing the boy to fall inside of it as the crows scattered away. Douglas and DK arrived, the start football player slowing down as he spotted the teen.

"Yo Marth, what's up?" Douglas asked.

Scratching the back of his head, Marth chuckled nervously. "Hehe, nothing much really. I was just doing the usual, you know, walking over to Burazazu and all that junk…"

The light brunet paused for a second before proceeding on. DK on the other hand, squinted, knowing Marth's behavior was rather unusual. The gorilla felt that Marth was hiding something and he was curious to find out.

Henry got up from the bushes, brushing himself off as he looked to Marth. The bluenet noticed he was bleeding as he took out a handkerchief, handing it to him.

"You're bleeding… here, take this," said Marth.

"Am I?" Henry looked at his arm and noticed a deep cut. Touching the blood with his fingers, the boy brought it to his lips, licking it as Marth gagged for a spilt second. "Hey, it's my blood, hehe. Who would of that that I'd be bleeding up a storm."

Grabbing the handkerchief, Henry began cleaning his wound as the boys continued on their way. Marth glanced at him, asking "How did you not even feel that?! I mean, you were bleeding for crying out loud."

"Well," explained the other boy. "I just happen to have a very high pain tolerance. I've gotten deeper cuts and this and didn't even notice a thing."

Sighing, the two made their way on the school grounds as they parted ways before anyone could see them.

Meanwhile, Link was inside his house on the computer. Since the Hylian was getting a ride to school today, he figured why not browse the internet for a little bit. Opening up the internet browser, it'll start up on Brawlville's main page. Before he decided to go to Google, Link noticed an article that caught his interest. It read 'Missing Girl from the Rich District.' Being curious, the dirty blonde clicked the article to see what it was all about. As it loaded, a familiar face was shown as it turned out that Lucina has gone missing!

Reading the article, it went into details how she was last seen on Sunday before her disappearance. Link stroked his chin, thinking about her and then moved onto Masked Marth.

"*Strange…. The day she disappeared was the day Marth showed up. Hmm, I wonder…"*

The Hylian shook his head, not believing the connection he was making. However, it was a possible option, seeing how he found it strange that he showed up the day after. Before he had more time to think, Rusl called him down to leave.

Shutting off the computer, Link got up, leaving his room as he hopped on Rusl's truck. The older man drove off, driving into town to drop Link off at school.

During second period, Mr. Game and Watch gave the students a chance to work together. Once again, Masked Marth had to barge his way in to work with them. Marth sighed, shaking his head. Part of him just wanted to punch the guy in the face while the other wanted to humiliate him. Sadly, Link actually enjoyed his company so it looked like none of those options were fitting.

"How was your guys' day yesterday?" Masked Marth asked.

'*It was nice.'*

"Great," Marth replied dully.

The masked individual couldn't help but notice that Marth always seemed to be closing him off every time they talked. He wasn't fond of this, seeing how he could read the boy's motives like a book. The boy new he wanted to become popular and it was working, but he knew something else was in store for him, something drastic.

The three worked on their assignments, helping each other out. Marth hated to admit it, but Masked Marth actually explained things a lot better than the teacher did. Maybe he could try to be his friend, if he gets popular of course.

On the way to lunch, two grotesque boys jumped in front of Masked Marth, startling him. Wario and Waluigi approached him, grinning.

"We may have lost the other Marth, but we have a new one brother!" exclaimed Waluigi.

Wario laughed, getting ready to lunge at the new student. Little did they know, the two Wario brothers were in for a big surprise. As he went to body slam him, Masked Marth swiftly moved out of the way, punching Waluigi who saw him at a disadvantage.

As Wario came from behind, he lifted up his hand, forming a fist as he punched Wario in the face. The students who saw this were amazed, girls swooning on how badass he was.

Masked Marth shook his head and sighed and made his way to the lunchroom.

After getting his meal, Masked Marth decided to eat outside once again. This time, he chose a spot closer to the four kids to watch them play their game again. Link joined him once again, as they both decided to watch them.

"Ugh, are you guys seriously going to play that stupid game and embarrass yourselves again?! Geez, you're such nerds…" exclaimed the second girl.

Morgan couldn't help but grin. "You're more welcomed to join us Severa. Besides, we can use a princess or a maiden to rescue."

Looking away, the red head sighed as her face turned red. "Why can't you just use Cynthia for that?! I mean, she's already as dorky as anyone could get."

Cynthia made a face. "Well, it wouldn't be the Justice Cabal if there were only two heroes?"

Severa rolled her eyes and sighed. "Well then, just find someone else to play the princess or something." As much as she hated to admit it, the girl really did want to play with her friends but hated downright embarrassment.

Owain showed up, making her day even feel more strange. "Behold! We got ourselves an enemy!" he shouted.

Masked Marth couldn't help but put a smile on his face, finding their game cute. Severa glanced over and noticed this,

her face turning red once again.

"Ugh! Now look what you guys did! You got the attention of people and they're probably thinking we're all losers," she complained.

"Shut your trap, evil brethren. Justice Cabal, today we'll rise to glory and defeat the evil she-witch who shall perish by the extent of our powers."

Morgan and Cynthia went along with it, causing Severa to get really angry. As they chased her, the girl screamed, running over to hide behind Link and Masked Marth.

"Don't just sit there! Save me from these dumbfounded idiots!" she commanded.

The two boys shrugged as they finished their meals. Getting up, they decided to join in on the fun. After all, they did want to play with them.

Cynthia paused. "Look! She's summoned more enemies!"

"It must be her minions," added Morgan.

They begin play fighting with each other, each of them really getting into it. After they finished, all of them had a very good laugh about it except Severa, who found this game rather tedious. The group exchanged names with one another before they were to part off.

"Hey Owain, did you ever find your cousin yet?" asked Morgan.

"No! Whatever fiend has taken her, they shall die by my sword hand."

The lunch bell rang as everyone headed inside. As Link went to pick up his book bag, he noticed something shining in the grass. Moving closer towards the object, he noticed a very familiar locket. To confirm his theory, the Hylian opened it and closed it, placing it into his book bag before heading off to his next class.

Afterschool, Henry spent his time playing with a black cat in the school grounds. He chased it around the courtyard, following it everywhere it went. Eventually, he caught up to the cat as it laid down, allowing him to pet it.

"Nice kitty… you're so sweet, yes you are!"

Henry continued to pet it, laughing as it purred. Thinking of what to do next, he raised his hand as he came up with an idea.

"Kitty, how about we play hide-and-seek?" he suggested. The cat looked at him, meowing as if saying yes. Beaming, Henry got up and told the cat to hide as he began counting to ten. After he finished, he turned around just to see the Gerudo. The boy frowned, wondering what Ganondorf was doing here anyways. For sure, Henry hoped that the red head didn't put a hand on that cat.

"What do you want?" he asked.

Smirking, the tan man answered "Revenge."

Henry bursted out laughing, finding Ganondorf's answer to be comical. Little did the boy know, the Gerudo was actually being serious. The redhead inched closer towards the silver haired boy as he slowly backed away.

"This isn't a joke!" barked the football player. "That's the problem with disgusting trash like you. You happen to be almighty and gifted in the art of dark magic but never take anything seriously. You're only talk. People like you boast about killing all the time, but did you actually do it?! No."

Chuckling, the Gerudo stared into his eyes. "Besides, you could have killed me that day last year. You could have had that chance, but you had to listen to your puny friend. Are the rumors true? Is it true perhaps you have grown soft after all? Whatever happened to Henry the Twisted Mind? The one who killed for fun, the one who murdered the hunters for killing your precious wolf friend." The man smirked, looking at him. "It's pathetic how soft you've grown, I would have liked to see you lose it and murder everyone at this school. Besides, you can still do it, it's not like anyone likes you anyways."

Opening his eyes, Henry glared. "If I had my magic right now, I would have fucking killed you by now. Looks like you're all talk as well, seeing how you haven't even attempted to kill me yet. In fact, you should be lucky Ricken convinced me to

spare your life seeing how I could have easily killed all of you in sight! Mm, yes blood!"

Ganondorf grinned. Charging his hand with dark energy, he used his Warlock Punch to send the boy flying. He knew he was vulnerable without his dark magic and had the urge to end his life once and for all.

During Kendo Club, Marth and Ike were really going at it. Everyone in the room stopped what they were doing to watch the match. Link observed closely, knowing that they weren't doing this as a practice round. Something told the Hylian that there was a lot more to it than meets the eye, especially seeing how they both flocked over Samus. If there was one thing that Link was perfect at reading, it was body language.

He could tell that both boys liked the blonde tomboy. Seeing how Marth was dating her now, he could tell Ike happened to be full of rage because of that. He could see the regret in his eyes, knowing that wished he could have gotten to Samus first before Marth.

As the entire team watched, they heard a thud from outside along with a cry. Both boys dropped their fight and turned their heads. Wondering what that was, they ended Kendo for the day and went to get ready.

Entering the locker room, the boys got dressed very quickly, knowing that if one of them doesn't barge in soon, something drastic is going to happen. Link finished first, dashing out of the locker room to find out what was even going on.

Growling, Henry got up quickly from the ground, trembling a bit. He winced, knowing that he was in fact useless without his magic and hexes. The silver haired boy made a dash for the school, entering inside as he made a sharp left. The Gerudo ran after him, not going to let his prey get away that easily.

Henry felt himself becoming out of breath, but he forced himself to go on. Running into the drama department room, he entered inside a prop closet. The boy collapsed on the floor, wheezing for air. His body became numb, shutting everything down as his vision slowly started to become hazy. Soon, he was completely lying on the floor, almost losing consciousness. The only thing he heard was the sound of voices drawing near.

Zelda was walking alongside her twin and Olivia, seeing what he was up to. When she wasn't busy doing student council work, the Hylian made sure every free time she had open to spend some time with her brother.

"So when are you guys planning to have the play shown?" Zelda asked.

"Our goal is to get it up and running by October 15th," Sheik replied. Olivia nodded in agreement, looking away. The pink haired girl heard faint moaning sounds in the prop closet as she perked up.

"Guys, do you hear that?!" exclaimed Olivia. Both Zelda and Sheik stood quiet for a moment, hearing the faint moaning sounds as the blonde approached the door. Opening it, they'd see an almost collapsing Henry fall more on the floor.

"Oh no!"

Olivia shook, wondering what happened to him. She was slightly afraid of him still but the girl hoped he was alright. After all, they had a puppy to nourish back to health together. Zelda rushed over to the boy and knelt down. She ordered her brother to get water quickly before he passes out. Sheik nodded, quickly running to the fridge and grabbed a water bottle. He tossed it over to his sister as she opened it and begin to help Henry drink it.

Ganondorf made his way into the theatre room, grinning at the sight he was seeing along with his collapsed prey. Walking closer, Ganondorf chuckled darkly as he moved towards Henry however, Olivia got in the way.

"W-what do y-you want?!" shouted the girl. The Gerudo just looked over to her and sighed, shaking his head. Was she really going to try to defend the helpless dark mage? Looking over to her, she winced as their eyes made contact with one another.

"Give me the boy and I'll let you guys resume on. That's all I ask for."

Spreading her arms open, Olivia glared at the taller man. "And what if we don't want to?!" The pink haired girl surprised herself, wondering what even drove her to do this. She wasn't the type to stick up for anyone, even herself. Olivia felt her blood pumping with adrenaline, looking Ganondorf straight in the eye.

"Then I guess I'll have to hurt you as well!" Before he could charge up another attack, Henry actually attempted to get up. He slowly moved towards Olivia, getting between her and Ganondorf.

"Don't…. hurt her… take me instead…. Okay?" he said. Henry still felt woozy, as he forced himself to stay up and about. Being pleased with this, Ganondorf kneed the boy in the stomach, causing Olivia to scream. Henry's body tumbled across the floor, Olivia running over to him and holding him.

Ganondorf charged up for the final blow to kill him once and for all as he made his way towards the two. Olivia clutched onto him, covering him as she closed her eyes. As Ganondorf was about to strike, he'd winced as Zelda casted Din's fire, hitting his back. Turning around, the Gerudo glared at the socialite.

"You…."

"I will not allow you to hurt anymore students Dragmire. If you even want to go near them, you'll have to go through me," said Zelda.

"Zelda." Before Sheik could stop her, she told her brother to stay out of this. The boy sighed, understanding his sister's motives.

The Gerudo grinned, moving over to strike Zelda were she'd least suspect it. As he was about to hurt the brunette, someone quickly slashed at him, protecting the student council president. The redhead's eyes met with his attacker as they met face to face.

Link took a battle stance, glaring at the football player. Figuring that he had enough fun for the day, the man turned around, leaving them be. Something about Link seemed oddly familiar, but he couldn't quite put a finger on it. For some reason, he only felt mutual hatred for the Hylian teen.

The rest of the group arrived to the scene late, wondering what in the world was even going on. Pushing himself up towards the front, Marth noticed Link along with Zelda and Sheik. As his eyes scoped the room, he caught Olivia holding an unconscious Henry. His heart dropped, quickly looking away from the scene.

"Please stop staring!" exclaimed Olivia, getting embarrassed. Zelda told Eirika to get the nurse over here to tend to the silver hair boy's wounds. The light blue haired girl nodded, leaving the room to get Nurse Birdo.

Marth stared off into space, letting the voices around him fade away. *"Why did my heart drop when I saw him in that condition?! I mean, I don't even like him or anything, not even as a friend either. Hell, I'm not even his friend but why do I feel these emotions?"* If there was one thing that was unexplainable, it was the human psyche. Marth didn't understand were these unwanted feelings come from or how they came to be. Instead, he left the scene as he let everyone else be.

Heading outside the school gates, Marth would be greeted by Samus. The blonde embraced him in a hug, Marth feeling indifferent about it. Noticing that something was wrong, the girl raised a brow.

"Marth is something bothering you?" she asked.

"I'm fine," he replied dully.

Samus could tell from the look on eyes that he was worried about something, possibly about someone he cared about. Sighing, she offered to take him to her house to study for their AP History exam tomorrow. Figuring it was good idea and a way to keep his mind on track, Marth accepted.

Stepping foot in Samus' house, Marth noticed how quiet it was. The layout of the house looked completely modern as if her family had a knack for technology. He awed at everything in sight, being exposed to it for the first time. The blonde giggled at his expression before taking him to her bedroom.

Entering Samus' bedroom, Marth noticed the walls were painted a light, orange color. Samus took a seat on her bed as he sat on her computer chair. Both students took out their study guides as they began going over the questions and answers together. Even then, Samus could tell that Marth was having a hard time focusing. After a good hour and thirty minutes of studying, she got up from her bed and leaned over to him.

"What's wrong Marth?" she asked softly. Marth perked up as his face grew red.

"It's one of those unexplainable feelings… it just keeps coming back and I don't know what to do honestly…" he replied.

"Maybe this'll help."

Samus kissed him on the lips, causing his eyes to widen. Marth embraced her as they went on her bed and started making out. Eventually, Samus removed Marth's sweater, along with his tie and uniform top as she unbuttoned it. Marth

looked rather surprised, perking a brow even.

"Samus, are you sure about this?" he asked, being very hesitant.

"I'm sure," she answered. "Everything will be fine. Besides, I'm on birth control."

Shrugging, the two continued their mating ritual as Marth was about to experience sex for the first time.

Olivia headed over to the local university to pick up some props from the theatre department head. She looked around with curious eyes, enjoying the layout of the place very much. Entering the drama building, the pink haired high school student made her way towards the office. As she arrived, the girl knocked on the door before entering.

An interesting man opened the door, ushering her to come inside. The man looked to be about Hylian as he had an overly happy expression on his face. It was so genuine to the point where it spooked her a bit. She looked around his office, looking at all the different kinds of masks he had scattered around before taking a seat.

"Are you the one that Ghirahim sent over?" he asked. The man wore a Cheshire cat grin on his face, even leaning closer to her on his desk. Olivia backed away as she looked at completely different direction.

"Y-yes…"

"Good! Well, here are the things he asked for." The man handed her a box full of props and other theatre goodies before bidding her farewell. Thanking him, Olivia made her way out of the office and leaving the drama department building. She figured that she could put them in her mother's trunk and leave them there for the time being.

Olivia made her way towards the campus grounds, heading out until she heard shouting.

"HEY WATCH OUT!"

Before she got the chance to move, she collided with someone. The box fell, scattering some of the belongings as it laid on the grass. Looking up, she saw the face of the perpetrator offering a hand.

"You alright there?" he asked. Taking his hand, the man helped her up, even going as far to put the stuff back in the box and hand it to her. Another person approached them, being a woman with short, spiky fiery red hair.

"Nice one Chrom."

Chrom looked over to his friend. "Not now Sully. "

Sully shrugged. She noticed Olivia and looked back at the bluenet grinning. "Alright then, I'll just leave you two alone," she teased. "If you need me, I'll be hanging out in the student union with Stahl."

The red head left the two alone. Olivia wondered what that was all about, but looked back to Chrom before looking away.

"What brings you here on campus grounds?" he asked.

"Well, sir…. Mister… I was just…. Picking up some stuff for the drama club… back at the high school," she answered. Olivia felt even more flustered around this guy. The fact that the stranger happened to be fairly attractive didn't help either.

"I see." Chrom looked away, thinking of another word to stay. The two stared at each other intensely for about ten minutes, not exchanging a word with one another. Finally breaking the silence, Chrom was about to speak again until Olivia interrupted him.

"Oh! Look at the time! Gotta go!" She thanked him, grabbing the box before running off. Chrom stared at her as she left.

"Er…" Chrom sighed. "Gods, I didn't even catch her name!"

Marth was dropped off by Samus before she drove off. He wouldn't forget the special intimacy they had today as he entered his house, opening the door. Looking around, he noticed no one was home.

"Elice?"

He sighed, figuring that Elice might be tending to Henry's needs. The bluenet headed into his room, opening up his study guide as he figured he'd use this quiet atmosphere to his advantage before Henry gets home. Marth studied for

three hours more before glancing over at the clock. It seemed to be getting late at night as he wondered where Elice even was.

"*It's not like her to be this late…"*

The bluenet couldn't help but worry excessively for his sister's disappearance. This was very unusual behavior, especially from the girl herself. Marth grabbed his clothes for the night and decided to take a shower to sooth his anxiety.

He turned on the faucet as he let the soothing water take away his pain. Opening up the bottle of shampoo, he begins rinsing and washing his hair. After he finished, Marth stepped out, dried his hair with a towel and turned on the vent. He'd grab his sister's blow dryer and starts drying and styling his hair for tomorrow.

Afterwards, he heard sounds downstairs as he perked up and left the bathroom.

Elice entered the house along with Henry, who seemed to be woozy from earlier. She seemed to bring home from Chinese food, which made Marth sigh of relief. Rushing down the stairs, he couldn't help but want to embrace Elice into a hug.

"Elice, you're back!" he chirped. Marth sighed of relief once more, actually glad that Henry was okay too. He still didn't understand his newfound emotions for the guy, but he figured that it'll wear off soon. The three headed into the kitchen as Elice began serving them.

Marth dug into his meal, glancing up at his sister.

"What took you guys so long?" the bluenet asked.

"Well, when I got the call from the school it turns out that they had to take Henry to the emergency room since he wasn't responding to the usual treatment. Thankfully he was okay by the time I got there and you know how the waitlist is there," she answered.

He nodded as he continued to eat. Looking over to Henry, he could tell that they even gave him more medication to stop any inflammation. The silver hair boy looked like a drowsy zombie, not cracking his usual jokes and just slowly ate. It was strange seeing him like that but he hoped that he'd be back to his irritating self tomorrow.

The rest of the night went silent as a mouse. Marth headed upstairs to get ready for bed as Henry took his final medication. Both boys joined each other as Marth turned off the lights.

Around midnight, the bluenet felt someone tugging at his shirt. Groaning, he got up slowly and looked over to his left to notice Henry was awake. Looking over, he noticed that his eyes were actually open, which was a rare sight. Marth hated to admit this, but the boy did have a pretty handsome face. His light blue eyes even enhanced that affect. The bluenet wanted to mentally slap himself right now for even thinking that about the crow boy.

"Marth?" murmured Henry.

"Yeah?"

"Promise me something," he whispered softly.

Tilting his head, Marth couldn't help but have curiosity about the boy's proposal. "And that is?"

"Promise me that you won't abandon me…"

"Abandon you? Why would I do anything like that?!" Marth now really wanted to slap himself on the head. *"Dammit, why did I just say that?! You're not supposed to befriend him Lowell, you're supposed to want him gone."*

Looking away, the silver haired boy frowned. He began to tugging at the blanket for comfort. Finally, he spoke, explaining everything.

"For all of my life, I was always abandoned. My family never wanted me in the first place seeing how I was so weak, frail, and pathetic. Growing up, I never really had any playmates either. Nobody wanted me since the day I was born but I didn't mind. I learned to entertain myself and befriended many woodland creatures near the forest, but they left me as well. My best friend was the sweetest wolf I've ever met, but I regret the day she tried looking for me. A group of hunters shot and killed her, left her there for their sport. I…. I…." He choked back tears but he couldn't fight them. The poured down through as he shook.

"I… snapped! I killed them seeing how they took away my best friend. I didn't know how to react then and felt abandoned afterwards. Even at the orphanage, I was always getting abandoned whenever I see children come and go to their new families or when one of the church workers retires from their position… Please Marth, don't abandon me like they did…. Please…."

Henry placed his head onto Marth's chest, sobbing into it. Marth blinked and decided to console him like a mother would. He felt extremely sorry for him, knowing that his horrible jokes turned out to his attempts to belong in society. Sometimes he wondered how life would have been then if his parents never died or if Henry's parents actually loved him. Eventually, the silver haired boy calmed down, breaking the other boy's embrace.

"S-sorry about that, I'm never usually like this. I think the medication needs a higher dosage or something…"

Both boys went back to lying down. Henry looked up at the ceiling, then back to Marth. "Thanks Marth… you're the best friend and blood brother I could ever have…"

The two drifted off into slumber, Henry snuggling over once again to Marth.

And that closes it for Chapter 19. Please note, our next chapter I'm going to be doing a time skip to October and address the nominees in the next chapter. Then Chapters 21 will introduce the spirit week and chapter 24 is the prep rally.

Also by that time, Marth would of fully raised into popularity as he's now at the his full rise.

If you haven't vote yet, don't forget to vote.

Story Questions
1. What do you think is going to be Marth's downfall?
2. If you have friends who played/will play a similar game to what Owain and co. plays, would you join them or be just as embarrassed as Severa is.
3. Who do you think Owain's cousin is.
4. What do you want to see addressed in the time skip?
5. What do you want to see in Chapter 20?

Anyways, I'm out. I'll have the next story up soon, so stay in tune for that!

See you next time.

Chapter 21: Primadonna

I am finally here with Chapter 20! Sorry it took a little long, I had to balance out my last week of college before finals. Anyways, moving this answer from the temp author's note to here as well.

Now, addressing a question I got by superjimmy, it is in fact my school never had ROTC. I'm glad you told me about this because I would of never learned otherwise and it's actually very helpful. So I was wondering since it doesn't take place in the US, should I rename it to something else?

As for the poll, asking this again, do you think I should narrow it down now? If so, by top what?

Anyways, we finally hit the Homecoming season in this chapter! Also, Henry and Olivia finally talk again and I used their B level support convo as a basis for this.

Now here's chapter 20!

Trigger warning btw for ableist slurs.

Two months have passed since that fateful day. Marth's popularity began hitting its peak since September which involved him in getting even more friends. The bluenet was now familiar with everybody around the school, even on really good terms with the snobbiest of teens. Little did they know that he secretly developed a friendship with the school's reject under their sleeve. If someone where to find out, his newfound reputation would possibly be at stake. His friendships with his old peers drifted off as well as their group. They found new friends to satisfy their needs, breaking off their old friendship circle.

Caeda decided to engage herself in after school activities last month and befriended Sumia along with Cordelia, and Tana. The bluenette girl now sat among their table, chatting it up with her new friends. Roy and Wolt moved over to hang out with Lilina's friends that consisted of Sheik, Olivia, Popo and Nana. Merric managed to find some new friends who shared similar magic interests. They consisted of his newfound girlfriend Linde, twins Lugh and Raigh, Laurent, Sophia and Artur. Pit along with Kirby and Luigi hung out with Paula, Ness, Jeff and Tails. Last but not least, Link and Masked Marth had a closer relationship than he ever did and hanged out with a bunch of goofy sophomores.

It was a depressing thought to even see that his old group of friends drifted away from one another, but that's life for you. He figured that he was the one who kept them together for so long. Once he drifted away from them, it seemed like they also did the same which each other. The group was still friends though, even if they weren't as close, the only exception being Marth himself. Sadly, the bluenet now referred to as a prince by some, couldn't care less. Instead, he had everything he could have ever wanted. All he ever wanted was the world along with its people. Heck, he even wanted the primadonna life; from the rise and fall. His personality changed as well, the prince earning himself a big ego. He was more demanding, more of a prick but everyone adored him. Marth and Samus were still dating, but he started to feel like he was getting bored of her. He needed someone new to be around with and he knew who too. Ever since he started getting to know Eirika more throughout PE and kendo sessions, the boy started to develop feelings towards her.

Marth would break up with Samus in a heartbeat, but he didn't have the heart to say no. He knew Eirika returned his feelings back but didn't know how to end it with the blonde. He just figured that she'll lose interest seeing how he certainly was. One thing Marth would admit that Samus was pretty damn good at sexual intercourse, but little did she know that he was secretly doing it with Eirika. The two just started an affair without Samus' consent. Usually, the girl was always the one getting blamed but Marth insisted that it was okay. Her brother didn't know about it either which was probably for the best, seeing that Ephraim was the type of person who'd probably kill you if he found out.

More good things happened in Marth's life. He finally got a license and his award was a brand new car. The teen was bummed out that Jagen took a job promotion overseas, so he wouldn't get to see him as much anymore. His sister however, begins questioning him more often. She wanted to know where he's been, who he's seen and whatnot. Elice even tried to get him to eat more but he refused. From the beginning of the school year till now, Marth's appearance changed drastically. He was no longer an average sized boy, instead he lost a lot of weight. Marth was almost like a slender twig, striking a figure everyone wanted. His only true friend knew something was up but couldn't quite put his finger on it. Even if he didn't show it, he began to get worried for Marth as well.

The bluenet got up early this morning to get himself ready for the day. Thankfully, today was a Friday which meant tomorrow was Daisy's huge party. He couldn't wait for that, especially since her parents were going to be out of town for the weekend. Marth stepped into the shower, letting the water rinse away his trouble as he began cleaning himself. Afterwards, he continued his ritual which meant doing his hair and all other daily needs. Looking at the time, it was only

five thirty in the morning. The sounds of crows outside could be heard nearby. Being curious, he looked outside the window and noticed a huge flock of them in the backyard.

Heading downstairs, Marth rushed outside into the backyard and saw Henry playing with the crows. As the silver haired boy noticed him, he said something to the black birds before approaching the bluenet.

"What exactly are you doing out here?!" questioned Marth. Even after it's been two months, the boy failed to grasp the concept of Henry's actions.

"I was just playing with the crows, hehe," he answered. Marth sighed, shaking his head before giving him a playful shove.

"You're a riot, you know that," he taunted. He chuckled softly, sitting on the bench as he looked up. "Have you ever thought of what your future's going to be like Henry?" he asked, being curious.

"Naw, I really never thought of that. If I live, I'd want to be surrounded by all kinds of animals, maybe become a veterinarian or a zoologist. If I die, I want to die a painless death… I don't like ouchies."

"I see."

Both of them gazed into the fall sky, admiring the darkness. Henry loved the fall season especially since that meant that more of his little friends were out and about. He looked over to Marth and said something he never said before.

"Marth, I have to be honest with you. I may not look like it, but I actually fear pain. Something about pain just irks me whenever it be emotional or physical."

Nodding, Marth got up. He'd tell Henry to start getting himself ready for the day so they could head over to the school grounds. The bluenet warmed up to him, actually thinking of him as an actual friend as opposed to his other "friends." The silver haired boy nodded before heading inside to get himself ready for the school day. Marth followed him back inside, heading into the kitchen to get himself some breakfast. Opening the fridge, he took out some Greek yogurt along with strawberries and granola and mixed them up together before eating it.

He started leaving earlier to school ever since his reputation has gone up. Marth didn't want the popular kids to know that he's been driving Henry around as well, knowing what they already thought of him. The boy honestly hated playing along in their game but he felt peer pressure telling him to or else he'll fall down. As he finished his meal, Marth cleaned up after himself as he rinsed the bowl and cleaned it. Henry came back downstairs, ready to go. Since it was getting closer to the winter season, they changed from the summer uniforms to the winter ones. He'd prepare himself a to-go meal before heading out with Marth. The boys got into the car, driving off to the school.

Arriving, they'd part ways, Henry going back to play with his animals friends while Marth went out to look for the cheerleaders. Heading over to the field, he spot a couple of the girls practicing. It seemed that Peach wasn't there yet, so they were free to do as they pleased.

"Hey ladies," greeted the bluenet. He approached them, giving them a sly look as he flashed his waist at them.

"Hey Marth! What's up?!" greeted Daisy. Krystal and Jigglypuff stopped what they were doing as well to greet their friend.

"Nothing much, just seeing what my favorite girls are up to. You know, you can't resist your own charms right?" he answered, playing around with them.

The three girls giggled, finding him to be the most adorable thing. Their faces tinted red as they exchanged looks with one another before looking back at the prince.

"Say, Marth who do you think's going to get nominated for Homecoming?" asked Jigglypuff.

Shrugging, he replied "Not disgusting and ugly people, that's for sure. I definitely have a chance, maybe you girls as well seeing how you're swell and all."

Giggling again, the girls swooned. They huddled for a second, exchanging a few words with one another before giving their divided attention to Marth.

"Say Marth, I have something to tell you," said Krystal. Smirking, her and the other girls chuckled darkly before continuing on.

"You know the voting system? Let's just say that us girls had a lot of fun and added Olivia Flynn to the roster," she said, explaining. Marth couldn't help but grin.

"That Olivia? Seriously, I'm going to laugh when she reacts. God, she's such a pathetic bitch, always getting embarrassed over stupid shit. She needs to build a fucking bridge and get over it."

The four of them laughed, finding the girl's pain to be hilarious. Marth started to mimic her, even going as far as to act like he was shy before he bursted out laughing again.

"Totally," said Daisy. "Well, anyways when she's up at the nominee stand, she's obviously going to get all dolled up and pretty. If she wins, we're going to dump a red paint bucket on her. She'll be so embarrassed, she'll probably run home and cry to her mother!"

Once again, the four bursted out laughing. Marth couldn't wait to see this, especially since it'll be an event of a life time. Though, he couldn't help but wonder if he'll be stuck with her if he won Homecoming King.

"Also Marth, I gotta tell you the other thing we did," said Krystal.

"And that is?"

"We also flooded the male nomination with Sullivan's name as well. Even better, if they both win, the bucket's going to go on both of them! Everyone would have a hilarious laugh and it'll be the best thing ever!

"Haha, yeah…."

None of the girls caught Marth's drop in his voice at the last part as they continued to snicker.

"Isn't he like, autistic or something?" exclaimed Jigglypuff.

Daisy just rolled her eyes. "Didn't we discuss this before? He's fucking retarded okay, that's it. I was surprised they gave him such an easy sentence too."

"Well, maybe because he's like, you said, RETARDED," blared Krystal. The girls laughed once again as Marth watched them silently, not saying a word.

Surprisingly, the majority of the school day went by fast. Marth had an easy time during the first three classes as he managed to head over to the lunch room. He was greeted with his adoring fans as well as receiving a couple of eye rolls.

Henry happened to be outside with the rest of the band geeks and anime club as he happened to be climbing trees with Ricken.

"I don't feel like going any higher, so you're on your own!" Ricken headed back down to join Lissa and the others.

Mist watched from afar, looking over to her friend, shouting "Henry, just get down already! If you get higher up and fall, you're really going to hurt yourself!"

"Aww," he whined. "I just want to see what kind of things are on the top."

Sighing, the light browned haired girl found it useless to talk sense into him as she went to join the others.

Henry managed to make it to the top, getting a good view of the entire school. He opened his arms out, standing up from the tree as he began to flap them.

"CAW CAW!" he shouted. He then made his way over, and looked at his friends.

"GUYS I'M A BIRD, LOOK AT ME, I CAN FLY!"

"Henry no…."

It was too late; the silver haired boy jumped down and ended up hurting himself badly. Of course, he was able to move as if nothing happened.

Olivia saw this from far away, excusing herself as she rushed over to him.

"Um, Henry? What are those red stains on your clothes?" she asked.

Looking down at his shirt, he'd notice it as well. Grinning, he laughed before giving the pink haired girl a response.

"Oh, will you look at that? It's blood! … I wonder where it came from." Moving his hand as if nothing happened, he'd move it towards the wound, grab some of the blood and lick it. Olivia winced at this, wanting to throw up almost.

"Oh hey… it's MY blood!" Henry bursted into a giggle fit as the girl frowned. "I must have gotten this earlier or just now when I thought I was a bird!"

Olivia shook her head as she began grabbing a first aid kit from her bag. "GROSS!... And also, that's really creepy! Why are you even laughing about something like this," she exclaimed, scolding him.

Sighing, she begins to open the kit. "That wound needs to be addressed immediately."

Laughing, he continued to grin. "You wanna help? It's kinda out of the way, so I can't reach it."

She sighed once again, removing his shirt to patch him up. She hoped no one was staring as she went to look for the wounds. One thing Olivia noticed that Henry seemed to have a lot of scars on his back from multiple wounds. Finding the wound, she noticed that it was an older one that happened to open up again after the fall.

"Oh my, look how deep this is! How do you not even notice this?!"

"Oh that? I got a high pain threshold. It's a genetic thing. Nerve damage to be exact."

Sighing, she begin to patch up the wound, cleaning it first so it won't get any infections.

"To be honest, I've had worse than this," he exclaimed. Olivia sounded surprised, almost appalled even.

"You've had worse?! Where?! And how?!"

"Well, when I was a kid, my parents used to spend their time working all day, so I'd get tossed back and forth between babysitters. Also, the children afterschool used to beat me up all the time as well. Anyways, I found a couple of magic tomes and some of the experiments I did got waaaaay out of hand. I almost burned my face once and even my own house down!"

Olivia frowned. "Your babysitters were negligent! Why didn't your parents put you in an afterschool activity or something?!"

"Well, my parents didn't care what I did. In fact, it was like I was never even there unless it involved one of them having to come over to the school. The only time I really got in trouble with them was when I burned one of my bullies on accident! Sent me to bed with no dinner."

Continuing to smile, the boy added "Heck that was one of the reasons why they overworked themselves so much. They didn't want to see me at all, in fact, they'd get rid of me in a heartbeat."

He noticed her face expression gloomed. Trying his best to cheer her up, he exclaimed "Hey, no worries! I turned out just fine!"

Olivia's face expression got serious as she finally had something to confess to the silver haired boy. "I see now… your cheerful demeanor is just a mask you use to hide your pain. You use it as a cover to tamp down your deep-seated resentment and anger…"

Henry laughed at her statement, finding it to be the most hilarious thing he's ever heard. "That's what all of my psychologists said, but nope! I'm just a happy guy."

Shaking her head, she replied "No, no… you can't fool me. I've never seen a real smile from you, one from the heart. I'm a performer you know, I can tell a faker when I see one."

She'd put his clothes back on as she begin to coddle him. "Shh, it's all okay now. You never need to see those terrible people again." She whispered softly, stroking his hair. "Now come on, let down your guard. I want to see the real Henry."

"Wow, you really ARE a crazy lady."

Olivia frowned again, shaking her head. "I am not crazy! I'm trying to help, so the least you can do is be polite!"

She sighed as she moved away from him. "Your wound is bandaged, but this isn't over. I want you to come see me

again so I can help you get over these emotional issues."

Henry nodded, letting her words one ear and out the other. "Sure, I got time!"

Olivia would part ways, letting him go back to his friends as she went to apologize to them for the long wait.

"*How did she… know?"*

During Anatomy class, the class was interrupted by the school's speaker. The principal cleared his throat before speaking in.

"Today we'll be announcing the homecoming nominees for all classes starting with the freshman."

He began going over the list of names, first going over the nominees for queen before he moved onto king. He also did the same for the sophomores, going on by the list as he also did the same format. Finally, it was the moment Marth anticipated for, the juniors.

"Next we have the junior class nominations. Our first nominee for homecoming queen is… Jigglypuff Lullaby."

Jigglypuff got up from her desk in the classroom and screamed. Meta Knight shook his head, telling her to sit down before he writes her up for detention.

"The next runner up is… Amy Rose!"

Amy was surprised in her classroom. She almost screamed as she was excited but she managed to control herself.

"Next is… Daisy Sarasa!"

"Yahoo!" Daisy shouted in her theatre class. "Alright, I made it in the nominees! Go Daisy, go Daisy!" she exclaimed, being happy for herself. Of course her friends in that class clapped for her as well.

"The next nominee is… Peach Toadstool!"

Peach bursted out crying in her class as everyone told her that they were happy for her and she deserved it. She was happy even though she knew that her boyfriend was a senior.

"Next on the list… L'Arachel Rausten."

L'Arachel screamed and danced around, causing Ephraim to look away in embarrassment in their Algebra II class.

"Next is… Eirika Renais!"

Eirika perked up from her History class. She was actually surprised, wondering how she even got nominated. She figured that Innes must of played a part of this but shrugged off the thought.

"Next nominee for homecoming queen is…. Samus Aran!"

Samus perked up in confusion. A couple of kids congratulated her in class as she still continued to have that dumbfound look on her face. *"Homecoming queen? This must be some kind of mistake."*

"Next on the list is… Zelda Harkinian."

Zelda wasn't surprised. In fact, it was nothing new. She figured she'll have a shoo in for the winning spot once again alongside with him. She was hoping he'd win though so she can finally confess to him.

"And last but not least for the Junior girls… Olivia Flynn!"

Daisy did her best to hold in her laughter as Olivia herself was puzzled. A couple of the kids congratulated her and hoped she'll win. Some other reasons where to show that normal kids can win something as well besides a popular kid.

Clearing his throat, Crazy Hand grabbed the list full of the male nominees. "Now, it's time to announce the nominees for junior class homecoming king. First up, we have is Douglas Falcon!"

Douglas did a salute in his class which made the teacher ushered him to sit down.

"Next up is… Sonic the Hedgehog!"

Sonic grinned as if he wasn't surprised. "Sonic's the name, speed's my game!"

"Next in line for homecoming king is… Ephraim Renais."

The boy was surprised in his classroom. A low growl could be heard as he thought this one of Innes' jokes for another rivalry. L'Arachel of course, had to congratulate him.

"Next nominee is…. Innes Frelia."

Innes just shrugged and continued his work as if nothing happened.

"Next in line is…. Link Highwind!"

Link tilted his head and shrugged. He was surprised that enough people liked him to even nominate him. He couldn't help but grin, imaging Groose's reaction to this.

"Next is…. Ike Gaiwan!"

Ike wasn't surprised as he heard his name on the intercom. In fact, he felt like he was going to be an easy shoo-in once again alongside Zelda. Part of him wished that Samus won so he can finally convince her that Marth's a bad person.

"Next up is… Marth Aritia."

Masked Marth perked up as a bunch of girls congratulated him in Anatomy class. Marth rolled his eyes and frowned, finding his rival to be rather annoying.

"Wow, I hope you win Marth!" exclaimed Malon. "That'll be a real sight to see, defeatin' Ike at the Homecomin' King spot."

Gaius perked over to his lab partner who continued to swoon over Masked Marth. Shaking his head, he placed another piece of candy into his mouth.

"Lonlon, calm your tits."

Malon's face turned red, wanting to slap her lab partner's face. She hated the nickname that he gave her, heck he gave everyone nicknames. Masked Marth was Zorro, the teacher himself got dubbed as Shorty, Marth was princess and of course everyone knew who Crow was. The students quiet down to hear the last of the junior class homecoming king nominees.

"Next nominee is… Marth Lowell!"

Marth smirked. Some people rolled their eyes, knowing of his attitude. Henry wasn't paying attention as he was too busy drawing more of his crappy manga. The only goal in Marth's mind was to beat Masked Marth as Homecoming king. Gaius looked over to the other bluenet, smirking.

"I think there's been a mistake. Shouldn't Princess be nominated for junior Homecoming queen, not king?" mocked the senior.

A couple of snickers could be heard in the classroom from the other students. Now, this was something that Malon herself could agree on.

Marth rolled his eyes and made a face. "Well," he said, getting ready to attack the smartass, "At least I don't look like garbage."

Gaius shook his head, finding him rather amusing. "Woah, check your privilege!"

Olimar tried his best to quiet down the class once again. Everyone settled down to let the announcements for the homecoming queen and king finish.

"Last but not least for the junior nominees is…. Henry Sullivan."

Henry perked up, very confused. Everyone else exchanged strange glances as well wondering how the hell the teen ended up on the roster. The silver haired boy eventually shrugged it off, going back to drawing his strange anime comics. The senior nominees now started to be called as everyone in Anatomy class went back to doing their work. Marth couldn't wait for school to end, seeing as he was still very eager for the party.

The bell eventually rang as everyone stepped out. Marth made a dramatic exit, pushing Masked Marth out of the way to

get to English class. The other bluenet sighed, shaking his head as he headed over to the boy's bathroom to freshen up.

]Meanwhile, as Peach headed over to her final class, many students congratulated her on the way over. She couldn't help but smile, thanking every single one of them. A girl with long, curly brown hair approached her as well.

"So I've heard you made the nominees Peach. I just wanted to congratulate you," she said.

"Oh thank you Pauline," said the blonde. Part of Peach couldn't trust her, seeing as she was Mario's ex-girlfriend. Unlike the usual when exes stood away from each other, she and Mario were still close friends. Peach couldn't help but be a bit jealous, hoping that Pauline doesn't try anything to get back with him. What didn't help was that she also happened to be a senior just like Mario.

"I totally can't wait for tomorrow's party by the way," she exclaimed. "I bet it's going to rock just like the other ones!"

The two exchanged goodbyes and left. Peach pouted, grumbling to herself.

"Why did I have to invite Pauline?! I can't even trust her alone with my boyfriend and just…. Ugh, I feel that I'm too nice for my own good."

He'd come face to face with Link inside, greeting him as they both began washing their hands. As the other boys passing by left, the Hylian opened up his book bag, grabbing an object and dangled it in front of Masked Marth. Grinning, Link gave him a look as if he was saying 'I caught you.'

Glancing over, Masked Marth noticed the object happened to be a golden locket. His eyes widened a bit, looking over at it before grabbing it from Link.

"How…"

'*It fell out two months ago. I've already figured that you weren't whom you seemed to be but I never had a problem with it. In fact, let's keep this little secret to ourselves, shall we?'*

Smiling softly, Masked Marth nodded in agreement before the two headed out of the restroom and parted ways. He entered his English class, knowing that it was going to be an easy day since they were watching a movie.

Taking a seat in his chair, the boy sighed of relief. If someone else besides Link were to find out about his secret, he wouldn't know how the other students would handle it. Would some feel betrayed or even worse, used? Shaking those bad thoughts out of his head, Masked Marth decided to let his mind focus on the movie instead.

The school day ended as everyone rushed outside to go home for the weekend. Marth waited for the majority of the students to disappear before heading over to meet Henry at the parking lot. As more and more disappeared, he began making his way only to be stopped by DK.

"Hey Marth, ready for the party tomorrow?" asked the ape.

"Of course, besides, what's better than no parental supervision?"

"Free booze of course! I'm bringing a twenty four pack of beer over tomorrow. Of course my grandfather will never find out seeing as he's older than molasses."

"Aren't all older people gullible?" Marth waited for the football player to leave so he can get home quickly.

"Say Marth, I have a question?"

"And that is?"

"Why is it that you wait so long to go home?! Like, is there something or someone you're waiting for?" questioned DK.

Shaking his head, Marth felt himself getting irritated. "Nah, I just like making fun of kids who pass by me. That's just it. Sometimes I watch my girlfriend practice afterschool as well," he said, lying.

Nodding, DK let him be. As he watched the blue haired boy walk off, he couldn't help but be suspicious about something. DK knew something about his excuse was off and he wanted to be the one to find out what Marth was hiding from them.

The bluenet made his way into his car, greeting Henry as they both got in. He began driving over to the Lowell residence

before getting out and heading inside.

"Hey Marth?" asked Henry.

"Hm?"

"Don't you find it strange that I somehow ended up on the Homecoming nomination list? I mean, I'm not like you or anything so…."

Marth shrugged. He felt a bit bad, knowing he couldn't tell Henry the truth. "Maybe your friends felt like you deserved some recognition or something."

Shrugging, Henry couldn't help but nod in response. "I guess. Anyways, I gotta get packing to go over to the other place for the weekend. Besides, I'm going to have a hex a lot of fun with Chrom."

The bluenet shook his head, chuckling a bit. "Just don't try to kill him okay?"

He recalled last week's event where somehow Henry caused the older blue haired boy to break his leg. Marth didn't know how in the world it happened, but some things aren't mean to be explained. The two entered the house, Marth shutting the door behind him as he went to get his homework out of the way for the upcoming weekend. He'd miss Henry's company, but he knew that it would be best if he spent the weekend alone, seeing how he might get questioned by his sister before attending.

That's the end of Chapter 20. Heads up, Chapter 21 is all based on the party and then 22-24 is based on next weeks spirit week and the prep assembly. Please note that Samus doesn't find out what Marth's doing until the Homecoming dance, which is Chapter 25.

Chapter 21 will most likely be uploaded after I'm finished with my finals next week! I can't wait to be finished with them so badly so I can relax. Also, we'll be getting the Baking story pretty soon as well.

Anyways, question time

1. I'm going to go with this since a lot of you said it for his fall, what do you think is going to happen to Marth when they find out he's been friends with Henry? What do you think Marth's going to do?!
2. Do you think eventually karma will bite these popular kids in the butt?
3. What do you want to see in Chapter 21?

Bonus Question(you don't have to answer this)
What do you think Henry did to Chrom that made him break his leg?

Anyways, I'm out for a while so whoever else has testing/finals next week, I wish you the best of luck as well!

Chapter 22: Power & Control

Hello everyone! I am back from finishing up my finals! The good news is that I've passed all my classes for the semester, which is always a good way to start the summer. :)

Anyways, after I finished, I decided to rested my head for a little bit from all the studying that I have done. Now here I am with the anticipated Chapter 21 that you've guys probably been waiting for.

We're almost close to the halfway point in the story, which is quite exciting. Another thing that's exciting is in next month, we'll get to see the first screenshots of Super Smash Brothers 4! I wonder what characters are going to be in it this time. I doubt there's going to be any third party characters because having too much of that will take away from the game itself.

I'm hoping that either Chrom and/or Lucina get in.

I shall stop yapping now to let you guys read Chapter 21 hehe.

The next morning, Marth slowly got up and turned off his alarm clock. He felt slightly empty since Henry was gone for the weekend as he missed his cuddling. Sighing to himself, he slowly made his way off the bed to get himself ready for the day. After all, it was the big party night and he happened to be really looking forward to it. The bluenet left his bedroom to freshen himself up in the bathroom for the morning. Making his way inside, he'd brush his teeth, comb his hair and make himself look presentable.

Afterwards, Marth started to head downstairs, making his way into the kitchen to be greeted by his sister.

"Morning Marth," said Elice. She was drinking a cup of coffee, reading the newspaper article that was grasped into her hands.

"Morning sis," he replied, grabbing an apple from the fridge. Taking a bite, Marth made his way towards the table and sat down. His sister raised her brow, looking at him.

"Tonight's the party right?" Elice asked, reassuring herself.

"Yeah. What of it?"

"What time do you plan on coming home?"

Marth shrugged, obviously not knowing. He felt that if it got really good, the latest he'll be back is by midnight. Elice shook her head in disbelief at his response, not liking it one bit.

"I want you back by ten," she exclaimed.

Moaning, her brother pouted. "That's too early. Can I just stay until eleven thirty at the latest? That's when people are still drinking at the bars."

Sighing, the bluenette knew there was no use arguing with her brother. Instead, she took another sip of her coffee before responding.

"I just want you to come back home safely alright. I don't want you to end up like that poor kid who barely survived a tragic accident caused by a drunk driver a couple of months ago. His family suffered from minor injuries but he ended up with some serious brain damage, resulting in horrible amnesia," explained Elice.

Raising a brow, Marth looked at his sister and nodded in response. "Alright, I promise I'll be home before it gets really late."

Smiling, she answered "That's all I ask for."

Marth finished his apple, throwing it in the trash before heading upstairs to relax in his room for a bit. Entering his room, he opened up his book bag to get a good start on his homework before going over to take a shower. Even though he had more of a social life now, the boy felt that it was important to finish out school work before doing anything fun. Besides, he if slacked off it'll only cause Elice to get more suspicious.

Meanwhile Pit was on break from his new job that he started working at two weeks ago. Heading out of Brawlbucks, the

angel sat outside the café to watch the passerby's. The brunet would start to drift off into his own thoughts, wondering why things had to change. Unlike the others, he actually admitted that he missed Marth's presence before he started getting popular. Pit knew it was bound to happen sooner or later but part of him missed the good ol' days. He was a bit jealous of his former friend's popularity, seeing how the angel himself yearned for what he had. Unlike Marth, he knew about the consequences as he slumped in the chair a bit.

Sighing to himself, he'd take a sip of his water bottle. Little did he know, his trail of thoughts were interrupted by the sound of a chair moving as if someone joined him. Looking up, he noticed Ike out of all people. Pit wondered why the indigo haired teen even bothered to sit with him seeing as they hardly interacted outside of Burazazu.

"Can I help you?" asked Pit, confused to why Ike showed up out of nowhere.

"I know this is all the sudden, seeing as we really don't know each other much but let me make sure I got this right. If I'm not mistaken, are you the president of Yearbook?"

"Yeah and?" Pit wondered where Ike was even going with this.

Ike grinned. "I have a little favor to ask of you. Nothing big, just a small favor."

"And that is?"

"I want you to get an embarrassing picture of Marth. You know, play paparazzi or something. Rumor has it that Marth's hiding a really big secret," explained Ike.

Pit tilted his head a bit, frowning. The angel didn't like where this was going on bit. Even if Marth didn't associate with him anymore, he didn't think he deserved to be humiliated. He wanted to heavily refuse his offer but didn't want to be known as the boy who let Ike down.

"And what secret do you think he's hiding? That he sleeps with a teddy bear or something at night or?" Pit was quickly cut off by Ike before he could make more estimates.

"From what I've gathered, after school hours, Marth tends to wait till the majority of the students left and when most are in practice. I want to know who or what is he exactly waiting for."

The angel nodded. "So, what you basically want is for me to take a picture of what Marth's secret is and hand it over to you, am I correct?"

Ike nodded. "So, are you in?"

Pit wanted to refuse. *"Say no Pit! This guy just wants to ruin your former friend's life. Even if he turned into a jerk that doesn't mean he deserves horrible things."*

"I accept."

A wide grin formed on Ike's face, being pleased with Pit's answer. "Very well then, I should be heading out now. I'm looking forward to his secret."

With those words, the taller boy left. Pit got up to head back inside as his break ended in two minutes. The brunet sighed as he looked away.

"Lady Palutena's going to get so mad at me if she finds out about this. Why didn't I refuse, I mean Marth doesn't even deserve this…"

At the mall, Daisy was out with the other cheerleaders shopping for their homecoming dresses. The girls looked for the prettiest dresses, trying on many to see which one they liked the best.

"What about this one? Do you think it'll look good on me?" asked Krystal. The auburn haired girl peered over to see her friend holding a glittery, blue-purple dress. In response, Daisy gave her a thumbs up which made the blue fox beam in excitement. In fact, Krystal rushed over into the dressing room to try it on.

"Hey Daisy!"

Daisy looked over to see Peach come out, wearing a beautiful pink ball gown that made her look like a princess. The blonde twirled around a bit, looking back to her cousin. "How does this look? Do you think it's a little too much?" she

asked, pouting.

Shaking her head, Daisy smiled. "Not at all Peach. In fact, it makes you look very gorgeous. I'm sure Mario will definitely love it on you."

Peach grinned and went back to the dressing room to join Krystal and the others. As they were changing out, Daisy decided to look for a yellow dress for herself. Peeking over, she noticed a familiar face shopping for dresses as well.

Olivia was with her mother as they looked over at the dresses and examined them. Her mother grabbed out a random one and showed it to her daughter.

"How about this one sweetie?" she asked.

The pink haired girl shook her head as she began to get flustered. "I think that one shows a bit too much…"

Her mother inspected it for a moment before placing it back. "Come to think of it, you're absolutely right darling."

They'd move over towards the white dresses as her mother's eyes widened a bit before rushing over and pulling out another one.

"This one looks absolutely perfect don't you think?"

She held up a gorgeous, strapless white dress that touched the floor. It flared everywhere, having beautiful embroidery designs as well as silver gemstones. Olivia looked over before giving her mom an answer.

"It's beautiful mom! I think I'll take it."

Beaming, they grabbed the dress as they made their way out of the dress section. Daisy moved over a bit closer, being curious to what the two were talking about.

"I can't believe you're a homecoming nominee sweetie! I bet everyone's going to fall head over heels for you when they see you all beautiful and dolled up!"

Blushing, Olivia looked away and smiled a bit. "Mom please, I doubt that's going to happen. Besides, you're embarrassing me over here."

Her mother chuckled as the two left from the brunette's sight. Making her way back towards the yellow dresses, Daisy couldn't help but mutter to herself.

"This is going to get good. I'm glad she even chose white, it'll just make her surprise more hilarious."

"What surprise?"

Jumping, Daisy noticed Peach as she laughed a bit. "Oh, just the surprise of me choosing a yellow dress instead of an orange one?" she said, lying. She hoped her cousin really bought it, seeing as Peach was opposed to this kind of behavior.

"Oh! That's swell I guess," exclaimed the blonde. Daisy mentally sighed of relief, glad that Peach never really caught onto her suspicious behavior lately.

L'Arachel came out of the dressing room with the other girls to meet up with the other two.

"Hey, do you think that Marth's going to be at the party tonight?" asked blonde.

"Um, L'Arachel, which Marth?" stated Jigglypuff.

"Aritia of course! I already know that Lowell's going to be there."

"I hope so. He only said maybe, but if he does show, we'll get lucky!" exclaimed Daisy.

However, Masked Marth had no plans of attending Daisy's party. Instead, he decided to hang out with Link and his little sister Aryll at the amusement park. He figured that since everyone else would be too busy shopping for homecoming or getting ready for the party, he decided to not wear his mask today. Of course he had it gently placed in his side bag just in case any familiar faces showed up. They'd wait in line as he asked Link's sister if she was excited.

After paying for their tickets, the three made their way inside as Aryll went ahead of them by two steps. Grabbing her brother's hand, she'd drag him over to the first thing that interests her, which happened to be the carousel.

"I want to go on that ride first!" she exclaimed.

Link chuckled a bit, ruffling her hair as they went in the line to join her too. Masked Marth looked over to the Hylian as they slowly moved forward.

"Hey Link, did you get invited to the party as well?" he asked.

'*Yeah, but I declined the offer honestly. Something told me that something really bad was going to happen, so I figured it'd be best to listen to my hunch,'* answered the blonde. Masked Marth nodded, as if agreeing with him.

"I agree. Also, to be honest, I would feel out of place if I went. All of those kids are so… different compared to me. I mean, it's not a bad thing but the way they talk about people makes me… disgusted."

Link nodded as it became their turn. The Hylian helped his sister get on as he'd sit next to her, hopping on the horse. As the ride began to start, he'd be in deep thought. Part of him wondered if Zelda was talking about him for her crush or someone else. He figured he should finally ask her on Monday when he gets back. Besides, the more he let these feelings drift on, the worse it'll probably get

When the ride finished, the three got off and followed Aryll to the next ride which happened to be bumper cars. Thankfully, the line for the ride went a lot faster as the three were inside in no time. Afterwards, they'd go on a few more rides including a rollercoaster before taking a break.

The three of them ordered some lunch as they headed over to a small bench and plopped themselves down. Aryll began to dig into her hotdog, taking a huge bite.

"Are you enjoying your time here Aryll?" asked Masked Marth. The blonde girl nodded in response as she continued to eat her food. The bluenet took a bite of his sandwich as he looked up in the sky. Today felt oddly peaceful but something told him that an event was going to happen tonight. Whatever it may be, he knew that tonight someone will be struck with bad luck.

The sudden chain of thoughts quickly dispersed as he heard a familiar voice. Peeking over a little, he noticed Owain and Morgan at the amusement park as well. Opening his bag, he quickly took the mask out and placed it on his face. Link was confused with his sudden actions but he figured he'd be getting an answer later.

The two happened to spot the three as they approached them, waving.

"Hey guys! I'm surprised to see you here," exclaimed Morgan. He seemed pretty excited as he joined them at the table.

Of course, Owain did his battle stance and for what, nobody knows. "It appears fate has joined us once again. My sword hand twitches for it appears that evil doers may lurk these premises. However, let us enjoy our spare time searching for the legendary Missletainn."

Aryll just looked at her brother, wondering what the world that Owain was talking about. Link shrugged in response as he just went along with it anyways. He was used to it by now from the two months he's gotten to know him. Even if the boy was quite a colorful character he was still good company.

"So," said Morgan, breaking the silence. "What brings you guys here?"

"We're just taking Link's little sister out to the amusement park. It was originally going to be both her and his foster father's son, but the poor boy had a really nasty cold. We plan on picking him up a souvenir before we leave though," explained the bluenet. "We were originally invited to a popular kid's party, but we didn't feel like going. Besides, if I did go, I probably wouldn't be having much fun as I am here."

"I see."

Owain looked over as he seemed to be jolting ideas down in his notebook. He was known for being quite the writer and he was pretty damn good at it. It didn't help that he drew anime extremely well as he was working on his own manga series.

Being curious, Link peeked over and noticed that he already got a cast of characters as they were all mock ups of the popular kids. He recognized one of them to be Marth. Getting up, he'd grab his and his sister's trash as he excused himself for a moment. Masked Marth decided to join him as well.

'*Why did you put on your mask when you saw them?'* he asked.

"Well," whispered the bluenet. "Owain happens to be my cousin. He doesn't know about my whereabouts and honestly, I don't know how he react if he were to find out that I'm Marth."

Sighing, Link looked into the eyes that hid behind the mask. *'You know sooner or later you got to tell him, otherwise he won't stop his 'mystical quest to save you from vicious fiends."*

"I will when the time is right."

The two headed back to the table as they went back to resuming their activities. Letting Aryll lead the way, the group of four followed the little girl as they went to her attraction of choice. Eventually it started to get late, so Owain and Morgan decided to call it a night.

As they parted ways with the two boys, they decided to head over to one last ride before calling it a night. Masked Marth took off his mask and placed it inside his bag as they got seated. Aryll wanted a seat with others her age so it was just him and Link in their component. Soon, the ride started going as the Ferris wheel rose up and stopped for a moment.

The two happened to get a perfect view of the entire city.

"Isn't it beautiful Link?" asked the bluenet. Link nodded in response.

"I've never seen anything bright like this. In fact, the stars are a lot brighter now than they were in the past."

Masked Marth didn't realize it, but he slowly learned his head on Link's. He began feeling a bit warm, his face beginning to tint slightly pink. The Hylian glanced over and noticed this, but he didn't seem to mind it at all.

"Sometimes, I wish that days like this will never end."

Closing his eyes, Masked Marth decided to rest for a bit on Link's shoulder.

Marth made his way out the door as Elice trailed after him.

"Don't forget to be back by eleven thirty okay?!" she shouted.

"I promise!"

Heading into his car, Marth drove off to head onto the freeway to get over to Daisy's place. As he came to his exit, he'd make a right into the richer part of Brawlville. When he arrived, Marth parked his car near the others and got out. The bluenet made his way into Daisy's house as he was greeted by the auburn haired girl herself.

"Nice to see you Marth, come in!"

He'd step inside to already see some of the football players drinking beer. Loud music was blaring from the room, playing today's pop hits. Douglas approached him and handed him a cup.

"Dude, try this."

Looking at it, Marth sniffed it a bit as he looked disgusted with the smell but chugged it anyways. Afterwards, he stuck out his tongue which caused a couple of kids to laugh.

"Yuck, how do you even drink this shit?!" he exclaimed.

"Practice," joked the brunet.

The group laughed once again as they were joined in by Marth himself. Scoping the room, he noticed Sonic talking with Amy, or rather trying his best to shoo her off, Ephraim talking with Pipit, Karane, Ilia and L'Arachel and Innes sitting in the corner with Zelda as Eirika was engaged in a conversation with Tana.

The other popular kids were here as well, including Ike. Marth looked back to the football players as DK approached him.

"Say Marth buddy, rumor has it that you're friends with the social pariah. Is it true?" questioned the gorilla.

Marth took a minute to register that they were talking about Henry. Looking disgusted, he quickly shook his head.

"Fuck no! Just because I'm forced to sit next to him in Anatomy class doesn't mean we're friends. He's fucking disgusting for crying out loud, plus weeaboos aren't my type."

The boys laughed as they changed the conversation.

Peach watched Pauline and Mario mingle from far away, frowning a bit. She still couldn't trust her, seeing as Mario can go back to her any moment. As the two parted, her boyfriend came her way.

"Hey-a Peach. Did you miss me?" he asked.

"Of course! Say, it's getting really loud here, how about we move over into one of the rooms to have a make out session!"

"Let's a go!"

The two made their way upstairs to head into a bedroom as they began making out and eventually having sex.

Marth decided to head outside in the backyard. Looking at the time, he was already getting text messages from his sister, reminding him when to start heading home. Grabbing his phone, he'd set it to silent before placing it back in his pocket.

Speak of the devil, Ike happened to be out in the bavckyard as well. Samus was talking with Issac while the taller bluenet hung out with Boyd.

What made things worse that the boys approached Marth.

"Hey princess, you might have fooled the others but you certainly can't fool me," exclaimed Ike.

Marth gave him a glare, shaking his head. "What are you even talking about?!"

"You know, your boyfriend."

Rolling his eyes, Marth shook his head. "Henry's just a f-, just my lab partner, that's it."

Ike almost got him to slip up, which resulted in him smirking. "Quit hiding your sexuality already. Everybody knows you're a faggot."

The bluenet smirked back, chuckling to himself. "Hey Gaiwan, didn't you ever hear that people only call others that because they're hiding the fact that they're gay themselves."

Boyd exchanged looks with Ike as he backed out. He headed back inside to get some more beer as he had a feeling that he knew where their argument was heading.

Ike rolled his eyes. "What fucking makes you think that?!"

"Oh, just the fact that you hang around your fuck buddy 24/7. And besides, if I was gay, I'd rather go for Henry's dick and that's saying something."

The indigo haired teen couldn't take it anymore. Lifting up his fist, he punched Marth on the face as he trembled. Ike started to kick him while he was on the ground.

Samus perked up and rushed over and managed to pull Ike away.

"WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING TO MY BOYFRIEND?!"

Ike looked over. "He started it. You should tell him to watch his mouth and oh, tell him to control his dick too. Eirika's been seeing a lot of that lately." With those words, Ike headed back inside to get another beer.

Samus helped Marth up, looking to him.

"Is what Ike said true?" she asked.

"No, of course not. He's just saying shit to start it," replied Marth. He really hoped Samus bought his lie, seeing that this was not the right place to start another fight.

Samus paused for a moment before kissing him on the lips and walking off. Sighing of relief, he headed back inside to grab a water bottle.

Elice constantly checked the clock back and forth, wondering where in the world was Marth. She began getting very worried, especially since he promised to get home no later than eleven thirty at the latest. Glancing at the clock, it happened to be about one twenty five in the morning.

"He's not answering his text messages or picking up the phone… I guess it's up to me to get him back myself," she muttered. The bluenette herself was quite irritated with her brother's actions lately and she really wanted to get to the bottom of this. Grabbing her coat and keys, she'd head out the door with directions on how to get to Daisy's mansion.

Starting up the car, Elice sighed to herself, hoping that her brother wasn't trying anything funny. Quickly backing out, she made her way off the main streets to the highway. As she got off, she'd make a way to a green light, only to be t-boned with another car that ate a red light.

"Marth…. I'm… sorry….."

Everything faded from Elice's eyes as it turned pitch black. The only thing left she could hear was the sound of the sirens from the distance.

It happened to be getting really late. Either the majority of the party goers here were hammered to the point where they couldn't function or they were just drunk. Checking the time, it happened to be around three am. Panicking a bit, the bluenet figured he should go home before he causes himself to get in more trouble with his sister.

He'd leave the party, or what was left of it and head into his car. Opening up his phone, he noticed the constant swarm of text messages all from Elice. They kept constantly asking where he was and what was going on before he noticed a bunch of missed phone calls as well. Checking the calling history on his cellphone, the majority of them where from Elice and then two happened to be from Emmeryn while one from Frederick.

Going back to his text messages, he noticed ASAP messages as if it was an emergency. Marth started feeling sick to his stomach as his cousin texted him to get to the hospital right away. Sighing, Marth hoped that something didn't happen to his sister. He prayed to Naga that he hoped that it was Chrom's leg acting up.

He'd begin speeding through the neighborhood to get on the highway. On his way to the hospital, Marth got lucky that there were no cops around during this time. As he arrived at the hospital, he headed over to the reception desk, asking about a blue haired girl. Thanking the receptionist, he'd lunge his way into the elevator to get on the floor Elice was at.

As the elevator came to a stop, he got off and continued running. Arriving at the room, he entered just to see Elice's body on a hospital bed along with a depressed Emmeryn and a really aggravated Frederick. The bluenet knew this could only mean trouble.

The brunet looked over to Marth, his brown eyes colder than he ever remembered.

"Where the hell where you?!" he said in a stern tone. Marth winced a bit, never hearing the older man sound so serious before. It almost practically scared him if he were to think about it.

"I… I…." Before he could answer, Frederick cut him off.

"You knew she asked you to be home by eleven thirty at the latest! Since you've bothered to ignore her messages and whatnot, she went out looking for you and got into a collision."

Marth looked down. He didn't know how to respond, especially seeing since Elice was in a pretty horrid state.

"The doctor said that she's in a coma. We don't know how long it'll last or if she'll get out. Tomorrow, we'll be going back to the house to pick up your belongings, seeing as that you're going to be staying with us for a while."

With those words, the two adults left Marth alone to spend the night with Elice. The prince approached the bed, trembling.

"Elice…. I'm so sorry…. I'm so sorry for fucking up….."

Marth began sobbing, tears pouring down his face as it was drenched.

"It's all my fault….. if I even bothered to listen, this would have never happened…"

His body felt heavy with guilty. Forcing himself into the bed next to Elice, the boy cried himself to sleep. Deep down, he

hoped it was all a dream.

And here we have Marth's first part of his fall. His main fall shall probably appear around chapter 30 and from there on, we're in the middle of the story! :)

Anyways, if I remember correctly from the last chapter, 22 is going to start off on a Monday starting with the first spirit day. 23 is going to be a Wednesday and 24 a Friday along with the Homecoming dance in Chapter 25.

Please note for the poll, should I keep it up still or should I narrow the choices by let's say top six(someone give me a suggestion)? It'll give an opportunity to vote for the finalist and what not.

Now, it's question time.

1. How would things been different if Marth would have listened to Elice's rule?

2. What do you think Marth's going to do to Henry when he's the reason to behind his downfall?

3. What do you think should happen in Chapter 22?

4. Suggest to me some spirit day themes like Nerd Day, Dress Up as Your Favorite Cartoon Character, etc. I'll be using the ones I like the most(one per reviewer) for 22 and 23, seeing as 24 is a school spirit day.

Bonus Question(You don't have to answer this)

- Give me one endgame pairing you'd like to see. Note that I already got one of them planned, so you might get lucky if I take your suggestion.

Anyways, for the other story, I've already got Chapter 1 almost done. I plan on releasing it when I finish the first chapter or if I finish the second one. Iggy out!

Chapter 23: A Short Day

Hey guys! I am so sorry for the lack of updates recently. It's just that I had a really bad depressive episode which made me lose motivation really badly.

I'm up and running now, especially seeing the new SSB trailer got me pumped again.

Sorry if this chapter's really rushed and whatnot, I just been stuck on what to write for it so I just cut things short. I promise Chapter 23 will be a lot better.

There's also a new poll determining who will become our Homecoming King. I suggest voting while you can. Guests can vote too!

Marth slowly woke up the next morning, groaning. For a moment, he thought he was back in his room as he heard the faint sound of Elice humming. Perking up a bit, he moved his hands towards the desk next to the bed, grabbing his frames. Placing them on his face, he looked around just to have his hopes up for nothing. He was just in the guest room of his cousins' house, which bummed him out. It was not that he didn't like them, no he loved them all dearly just like anyone else however, it was just not the same.

Part of him hated himself for not listening to his sister's pleas. Even if it was through text messages and calling, he still should have listened to her. He already missed her presence, the warm embrace and most of all, her lovely smile. Just the whole thought of him spending possibly the majority of his junior year here or even forever scared him. Tears started developing, streaming down his warm face as he couldn't bear the thought of losing her.

Sadly, he knew he couldn't wallow in despair all day seeing how it was Homecoming week. If his sister were still around, she would tell him to chin up and think positive. It would be hard for him to do so, but Marth knew that he must.

He'd finally get himself out of bed, as he beginning digging around for his belongings. The bluenet knew today was the beginning of spirit week. Recalling the rules, it requires every nominee to participate for each of the days. Looking at the calendar in his book bag, Monday happened to be Dress as a Cartoon Character day.

Thinking about it, Marth never really watched much TV when he was younger. He spent the majority of his time playing videogames instead or spending time with Elice. Sighing to himself, he'd leave the guest room to take a shower and to get ready for the day. He figured that the least he can do is dress up as a character from a movie, seeing how that would be the easiest.

"Hmm…. Who should I be for today? I know, maybe the prince from Cinderella or something. That'd be easy."

Stepping into the shower, Marth turned it on as he began to brainstorm more possible ideas for the upcoming days. He started to see why some people couldn't participate on all days, seeing as it'd cost money and whatnot to keep up. As he begins washing his hair, he could hear voices outside the door. Marth figured right away that everyone was up and about, hearing his cousin's moans not from a far.

If he remembered, Frederick sometimes went overboard with them. Marth wasn't used to seeing a house being so spotless every day or even see him sweep every last piece of rock and pebble before they stepped outside. He could tell that this greatly bothered Chrom, however, he knew that was what kept Frederick happy.

Since Chrom's leg was broken, Frederick began hovering around him more than usual. The thought of his older cousin being embarrassed made him chuckle but at the same time, the bluenet was thankful that neither Elice nor Jagen were ever like that. As he finished, Marth stepped out of the shower to style his hair and whatnot for the upcoming day.

When he was finished, he stepped outside as he decided to go as Prince Charming after all. Besides, he already thought himself to be royalty. He'd head back into the guest room to gather up his stuff and made his way towards the kitchen.

Chrom was already out, looking annoyed as Frederick dusted Marth on his way before placing a five star meal in front of the older bluenet.

"Did he really need to be dusted? It's not like he's carrying any diseases and besides, we come from the same bloodline," stated Chrom with slight irritation in his voice.

"Well, I just want to look after your guys' well-being. Speaking of which, I have to get to work now."

Frederick placed the rest of the meals on the table, labeled, before taking off. Chrom sighed to himself of relief before digging in. He looked over to his cousin as he finally joined him.

"So Marth, I've heard you've quit Kendo."

"Yeah. It wasn't really working out for me, especially since I've been getting more homework as the semester goes by," stated the bluenet himself.

Chrom knew that he was lying out of his ass. He could probably easily guess the real reason he quit the Kendo club was because of Ike. It wasn't the only thing that he pondered about. Ever since two months passed by, he began to notice a complete change in Marth. The older bluenet wanted to know what the hell was going on in that school and really wanted to get to the bottom of this. However, before he can question his cousin further, the two bluenets were now joined by Henry and Lissa.

The two happened to be dressed up for the upcoming Spirit Day as well. Henry, since he was a nominee, had to while Lissa did it just as an excuse to dress up as an anime character. Marth looked at the two, getting a good glimpse at what they were wearing. Lissa happened to be wearing a wig, along with contacts and a Japanese school uniform while Henry wore glasses and a matching male version of the uniform she was wearing.

"*Where have I seen those characters before… they look familiar,"* he thought to himself.

Marth began to ponder it for a moment, before realizing it right away. The pair happened to be dressed as videogame characters that got an anime. He recalled playing the game before, which was why he recognized the outfits from somewhere.

"Aren't you guys dressed up as characters from Persona 4?" he asked.

"Yep! I'm Yukiko and he's going as Souji or Yu, whatever you prefer to call him," answered Lissa. Marth nodded, knowing that if he were to go further into the conversation, his younger cousin will go on and on about Persona and then anime he doesn't care for.

Henry looked over to Marth, still unsure about the whole Homecoming event. The bluenet figured that his friend was still in awe when he found out last week that he was one of the nominees. He felt the need to place his hand on his shoulder to tell him everything will be okay. It was strange, especially thinking that the person whom Marth couldn't stand ended up being so important to him in his life.

He was curious to know how he was handling what happened to Elice, seeing as he thought of her to be a good mother figure. Marth knew Henry wouldn't show it though, especially since he was around others who just wouldn't understand. Marth hoped that he would stuck around a little longer, seeing that if the court were to find him mature enough he'd have to go back to the orphanage. That was one of the things that he didn't want at all!

Chrom looked at them, first being puzzled from their attire. He eventually caught on that Burazazu's spirit week happened to start today, so the older boy figured they were participating.

When the group of four finished their meal, Marth forgot that he'd have to be dropping off and picking up Chrom for a while, which made him groan. Driving to and from school was already hectic enough for him as it is, but having to go to two places just stressed him out even more.

The gang headed over towards Marth's car, each getting in. Chrom took a bit longer to get inside due to his crutches, but his cousin managed to help him out just fine. Marth began backing out of the driveway, making his way on the main road to drop Chrom off first.

A few minutes later, he'd arrive at the university as he stepped out of the door to help his cousin out once again. Chrom managed to do fine, as he went over to meet up with his friend Robin. Marth waved over at the two before heading back into the car and driving off.

"Hey, do you ever get the feeling that someone might be watching you?" asked Robin. Looking puzzled, Chrom tilted his head.

"Not really. Do you?"

"Yeah. I just get the strangest feeling that someone's been watching me for a while. To be honest, I don't know to find it interesting or creepy," replied his friend.

Chrom shrugged. "Who knows. Maybe you're just imagining things again."

"Yeah, maybe you're right Chrom. Thanks."

As the two began heading over to their class, a figure stared at Robin as they grinned widely.

"Soon you'll only have eyes for me."

Finally arriving at the school, Marth parked and parted ways with the other two. His mind kept trailing back to Elice, wondering how she would have been doing if he wasn't so foolish. A bunch of students kept murmuring about something, some even gossiping about it.

As Marth passed by, their whispers stopped as they stared at him before continuing on as he moved by. The bluenet gave them nasty looks as if telling them to stop. Just as this day couldn't get any worse, Roy decided to approach him.

"Hey princess I've heard about-"

Before the red head could finish, the other boy quickly cut him off.

"Let me guess, you've come to mock me?! Well ginger I don't have time for your bullshit. I suggest saving it for another day."

Storming off, Roy just watched him. Sighing, he shook his head.

"I was just going to say I felt sorry for him, geez. I'm surprised he didn't stay home, seeing what happened to his sister and all."

The school day prolonged as Marth couldn't focus. He learned that the students at school were talking about what happened to Elice. In fact, Mr. Game and Watch noticed something wrong so he sent him to the counselor's office. He didn't seem to open up, which led to the decision of sending him home early.

The bluenet sighed as he drove off knowing he'd have to pick up the sophomores later. When he arrived back at his cousins, he ran over to the guest room and broke down.

Once again, sorry if this chapter was rushed. It's not my greatest and once again, I apologize. Please note that after Chapter 25, I'm going to focus on The Bake Off and take a break from this story until TBO is finished.

Anyways story questions

1. Do you think Marth should have stayed home in the first place?

2. How would you react if someone(ex best friend, rival, etc) came up to you and told you that they felt sorry because something drastic happened. Would you react the same way as Marth?

3. What would you like to see in Chapter 23? You can type out scenarios too(doing this actually really helps me, especially giving me a game plan).

Anyways, we'll be having Twin Day and visiting Anime Club since its a Wednesday. Tune in until next time and once again, sorry for the delay!

Chapter 24: Author's Note: Temporary Hiatus!

Hello! I know you guys were expecting an update but unfortunately I'm going to have to put The Rise and Fall of Marth Lowell on a temporary hiatus. It seems I've been in a rut with the story now and I can't think of anything for it unlike the other ones I got going on. Feel free to review the latest chapter that has been written if it hasn't been done already.

I feel really bad since some of you were expecting to know the homecoming results. Seeing how far this story has come along, I really don't want to disappoint everyone and discontinue it seeing how I'm surprised I managed to get so far in a story. :(

Hopefully I'll get back inspiration again. Meanwhile, I'll be working on The Bake Off and a bit on my new AU story The Moon and the Stars if you already haven't checked those out.

Also I got a new poll for another idea for a story(not an AU) that I'll be doing after The Bake Off is finished. Feel free to vote by checking out my profile. Guests can vote to in their correspondence to this Author's Note.

There is only two options this time since I got an idea of what I want to do and its an open poll. If you choose the second option, please follow the directions and give me a name.

Other than that, I apologize once again. Hopefully my muse for this story comes back soon.

-Iggy

Chapter 25: Author's Note:Status(Update Nov 2014)

Hello everyone! Just finished a tough semester of college, but I managed through. ^_^

Sorry if you think this is an update, but I feel really bad since getting overswamped with work, I didn't have any fanfic time, especially time to finish the bake off story. Now since I have time, that will be first.

Also I've been thinking for the past few months that now since I've looked over my own story again, I feel that I could do a different approach to it. In other words, I really want to rewrite and start over The Rise and Fall of Marth Lowell again. Now I'm having thoughts of I could have done this and that plus it would make it fresh again for old and new readers alike.

Seeing how we have new Smashers, I feel that I could incorporate them into the story as well. So, I'm asking you what would you like to see in the rewrite? Any scenarios, suggestions, what not?

Also since I feel bad, the winners for the Homecoming Queen and King were in fact, Henry and Olivia. Also since I might give this tidbit out since I'm gonna start the beginning off a different way and such that I decided Marth wasn't going to end up with anyone in the story, not even Caeda. I adore MarthCaeda to death, but I figured it wouldn't work out in this AU.

Anyways, give me some ideas and stuff and I will work on the Bake Off sometime soon, I mean it this time.

Also there's a poll for a story idea I'm doing. Guests can vote too.

Thanks for being so patient and once again, sorry

- Iggy

UPDATE NOV 2014
I am just here to say for those who haven't known yet the rewrite of the story is up under the same title. I suggest tuning into that one and following/faving if you want to.

I will still keep this one up for reference and if people want to reminisce the old story.

That is all. :)